

# Analyzing data using linear models

Stéphanie van den Berg

Versie 0.1  
(May 9, 2018)

### **Abstract**

This book is intended to be of use to bachelor students in social sciences that want to learn how to analyze their data, with the specific aim to answer research questions. The book has a practical take on data analysis: how to do it, how to interpret the results, and how to report the results. All techniques are presented within the framework of linear models: this includes simple regression models, to linear mixed models, and generalized linear models. All methods can be carried out within one supermodel: the generalized linear mixed model. This approach is illustrated using SPSS.

# Contents

|          |  |           |
|----------|--|-----------|
| <b>1</b> | <b>Exploring your data</b>   | <b>5</b>  |
| 1.1      | Types of variables . . . . .   | 5         |
| 1.1.1    | Continuous, ordinal, and categorical variables . . . . .                       | 5         |
| 1.1.2    | Qualitative and quantitative treatment of variables in data analysis . . . . . | 6         |
| 1.1.3    | Dependent and independent variables . . . . .                                  | 7         |
| 1.2      | Distributions . . . . .  | 7         |
| 1.3      | Mean, median and mode . . . . .  | 10        |
| 1.3.1    | The mean . . . . .   | 10        |
| 1.3.2    | The median . . . . .   | 10        |
| 1.3.3    | The mode . . . . .   | 10        |
| 1.4      | Variance . . . . .   | 11        |
| 1.4.1    | Sum of squares . . . . .   | 11        |
| <b>2</b> | <b>Linear modelling: introduction FULYA</b>                                    | <b>14</b> |
| 2.1      | Linear relationships . . . . .   | 14        |
| 2.2      | Pearson correlation . . . . .  | 14        |
| 2.3      | Simple regression with a continuous predictor . . . . .                        | 14        |
| 2.4      | Predicting the dependent variable . . . . .                                    | 14        |
| <b>3</b> | <b>Multivariate regression</b>   | <b>15</b> |
| 3.1      | Explained and unexplained variance . . . . .                                   | 15        |
| 3.2      | More than one predictor . . . . .  | 16        |
| 3.3      | R-squared . . . . .  | 17        |
| 3.4      | Multicollinearity . . . . .  | 19        |
| 3.5      | Multiple regression in SPSS . . . . .  | 21        |
| 3.6      | Simpson's paradox . . . . .  | 22        |
| 3.7      | Exercises . . . . .  | 24        |
| <b>4</b> | <b>Inference I: random samples, standard errors and confidence intervals</b>   | <b>27</b> |
| 4.1      | Population data and sample data . . . . .                                      | 28        |
| 4.2      | Random sampling and the standard error . . . . .                               | 29        |
| 4.3      | $t$ -distributions . . . . .   | 33        |

|          |   |           |
|----------|---|-----------|
| 4.4      | $T$ -statistics . . . . .   | 34        |
| 4.5      | Hypothetical population slopes . . . . .                                  | 36        |
| 4.6      | Confidence intervals for smaller sample sizes . . . . .                   | 38        |
| 4.6.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 40        |
| 4.7      | Degrees of freedom . . . . .  | 41        |
| <b>5</b> | <b>Inference II: hypothesis testing, <math>p</math>-values and beyond</b> | <b>44</b> |
| 5.1      | The null-hypothesis . . . . .   | 44        |
| 5.2      | The $p$ -value . . . . .  | 45        |
| 5.3      | Hypothesis testing . . . . .  | 47        |
| 5.4      | Relationship between $p$ -value and confidence intervals . . . . .        | 52        |
| 5.5      | Criticism on null-hypothesis testing and $p$ -values . . . . .            | 53        |
| 5.6      | Inference: from sample to population . . . . .                            | 53        |
| <b>6</b> | <b>Categorical predictor variables</b>                                    | <b>54</b> |
| 6.1      | Dummy coding . . . . .  | 54        |
| 6.2      | Predicting group means . . . . .  | 54        |
| 6.3      | Dummy coding for more than two groups . . . . .                           | 54        |
| 6.4      | Comparing more than two groups . . . . .                                  | 54        |
| 6.4.1    | Analyzing categorical predictor variables . . . . .                       | 55        |
| 6.5      | $F$ -test for multiple group comparisons . . . . .                        | 58        |
| <b>7</b> | <b>Moderation: testing interaction effects</b>                            | <b>59</b> |
| 7.1      | Categorical by linear interaction . . . . .                               | 59        |
| 7.1.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 66        |
| 7.2      | Interaction with two dummy variables . . . . .                            | 67        |
| 7.3      | More than two groups . . . . .  | 69        |
| 7.4      | Linear by linear interaction . . . . .                                    | 72        |
| <b>8</b> | <b>Assumptions of linear models RUYA</b>                                  | <b>73</b> |
| 8.0.1    | Independence . . . . .  | 73        |
| 8.0.2    | Linearity (additivity) . . . . .  | 78        |
| 8.0.3    | Homogeneity of variance . . . . .   | 78        |
| 8.0.4    | Residuals normally distributed . . . . .                                  | 78        |
| 8.1      | Testing assumptions . . . . .   | 78        |
| 8.1.1    | Independence . . . . .  | 78        |
| 8.1.2    | Linearity (additivity) . . . . .  | 78        |
| 8.1.3    | Homogeneity of variance . . . . .   | 78        |
| 8.1.4    | Residuals normally distributed . . . . .                                  | 78        |
| 8.1.5    | What to do when assumptions are violated? . . . . .                       | 78        |
| 8.1.6    | nonlinearity . . . . .  | 78        |
| <b>9</b> | <b>Linear modelling: more advanced topics</b>                             | <b>80</b> |
| 9.0.1    | Planned comparisons . . . . .   | 80        |
| 9.0.2    | Testing more than one contrast . . . . .                                  | 86        |
| 9.0.3    | Post-hoc comparisons . . . . .  | 87        |

|           |   |            |
|-----------|---|------------|
| 9.0.4     | Posthoc tests for complex contrasts . . . . .                       | 90         |
| 9.0.5     | Fishing expeditions . . . . .                                       | 90         |
| <b>10</b> | <b>When assumptions are not met: non-parametric alternatives</b>    | <b>93</b>  |
| 10.1      | Spearman's rho . . . . .  | 97         |
| 10.2      | Kendall rank-order correlation coefficient $T$ . . . . .            | 99         |
| 10.3      | Kruskall-Wallis test for group comparisons . . . . .                | 101        |
| <b>11</b> | <b>Linear mixed modelling: introduction</b>                         | <b>103</b> |
| 11.1      | Fixed effects and random effects . . . . .                          | 103        |
| 11.2      | Pre-post intervention design . . . . .                              | 107        |
| 11.2.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 112        |
| 11.3      | Pre-mid-post intervention design . . . . .                          | 118        |
| 11.3.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 121        |
| 11.4      | Pre-mid-post intervention design: linear effects . . . . .          | 123        |
| 11.4.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 126        |
| 11.5      | Linear mixed models and interaction effects . . . . .               | 130        |
| 11.5.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 135        |
| 11.6      | Mixed designs . . . . .   | 139        |
| 11.6.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 140        |
| 11.7      | Mixed design with a linear effect . . . . .                         | 143        |
| <b>12</b> | <b>Non-parametric alternatives for linear mixed models</b>          | <b>148</b> |
| 12.1      | Checking assumptions . . . . .                                      | 148        |
| 12.2      | Friedman's test for $k$ measures . . . . .                          | 151        |
| 12.3      | How to perform Friedman's test in SPSS . . . . .                    | 156        |
| 12.4      | Wilcoxon's signed ranks test for 2 measures . . . . .               | 158        |
| 12.5      | How to perform Wilcoxon's signed ranks test in SPSS . . . . .       | 160        |
| 12.6      | Ties . . . . .  | 162        |
| 12.7      | Exercises . . . . .   | 163        |
| <b>13</b> | <b>Generalized linear models part I: logistic regression</b>        | <b>168</b> |
| 13.1      | Introduction . . . . .  | 168        |
| 13.2      | Logistic regression . . . . .                                       | 172        |
| 13.2.1    | Bernoulli distribution . . . . .                                    | 174        |
| 13.2.2    | Odds and logodds . . . . .  | 175        |
| 13.2.3    | Exercises . . . . .   | 178        |
| 13.2.4    | Logistic link function . . . . .                                    | 180        |
| 13.3      | Logistic regression in SPSS . . . . .                               | 183        |
| 13.3.1    | Exercises . . . . .   | 186        |
| <b>14</b> | <b>Generalized linear models for count data: Poisson regression</b> | <b>190</b> |
| 14.1      | Poisson regression . . . . .  | 190        |
| 14.2      | Poisson regression in SPSS . . . . .                                | 195        |
| 14.3      | Interaction effects in Poisson models . . . . .                     | 197        |
| 14.4      | Crosstabulation and the Pearson chi-square statistic . . . . .      | 202        |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 14.5 Poisson regression or logistic regression? . . . . . | 204 |
|---|-----|

# Chapter 1

## Exploring your data

### 1.1 Types of variables

Data analysis is about variables. In linear models there are different kinds of variables. One important distinction is between dependent variables and independent variables. The other important distinction is about the measurement level of the variable: continuous, ordinal or categorical.

#### 1.1.1 Continuous, ordinal, and categorical variables

A typical example of a continuous variable is age: in theory, you could calculate your age in the number of minutes that have passed since your time of birth. It is continuous in the sense that it has an (almost) infinite number of possible values. For example, for two children born one minute apart, there could be a third child that was born just in between the other two. In practice of course, we measure age in days, and sometimes only in months or years, but given there are many values, we usually treat such an age variable in years as continuous. Other examples of continuous variables include height in inches, temperature in degrees Celsius, years of education, or systolic blood pressure in millimeters of mercury. Note that in all these examples, quantities (age, height, temperature) are expressed as the number of a particular unit (years, inches, degrees). Therefore continuous variables are often called quantitative variable, or quantitative measures. There is a further distinction into interval and ratio variables; this distinction is treated in the research methods course in Module 1.

With ordinal measures, there are no units. An example would be a variable that would quantify size, by stating whether a t-shirt is small, medium or large. Yes, there is a quantity here, size, but there is no unit to state EXACTLY how much of that quantity is available. Similar for age, we could code a number of people as young, middle-aged or old, but on the basis of such a variable we could not state by *how much* two individuals differ in age. Ordinal data are usually *discrete*: there are no infinite number of levels of the variable. It goes

up in discrete steps, for example, having values of 1, 2 and 3, and nothing in between.

Lastly, categorical variables are not about quantity at all. Categorical variables are about quality. A typical example of a categorical variable would be the colour of pencils: they can be either green, blue, black, white, red, yellow, etcetera. Nothing quantitative could be stated about a bunch of pencils that are only assessed regarding their colour, other than saying that a green pens are greener than other pens, and red pens are redder than other pens. There is usually no logical order in the values of such variables. Other examples include nationality (French, Turkish, Indian, other) or sex (male, female, other). Categorical variables are often called nominal variables, or qualitative variables.

### Exercises

In the following, identify the type of variable in terms of continuous, ordinal discrete, or categorical:

Age: ... years

Weight: ... kilograms

Size: ... meters

Size: small, medium, large

Exercise intensity: low, moderate, high

Agreement: not agree, somewhat agree, agree

Agreement: totally not agree, somewhat not agree, neither disagree nor agree, somewhat agree, totally agree

Pain: 1, 2, ..., 99, 100

Quality of life: 1=extremely low, ..., ..., 7=extremely high

Colour: blue, green, yellow, other

Nationality: Chinese, Korean, Australian, Dutch, other

Gender: Female, Male, other

Gender: Female, Male Number of shoes:

### 1.1.2 Qualitative and quantitative treatment of variables in data analysis

There is a fundamental difference between continuous and ordinal variables, but it is possible to treat them the same way in data analysis. For data analysis with linear models, you have to decide for each variable whether you want to treat it as qualitative or quantitative. Continuous variables are always treated as quantitative. Categorical data are always treated as qualitative. The problem is with ordinal variables: you can either treat them as quantitative variables or as qualitative variables. The choice is usually based on common sense and whether the results are meaningful. For instance, if you have an ordinal variable with 8 levels, like a Likert scale, it usually does not make sense to treat it as qualitative. If the variable has only 3 levels, it is often meaningful to treat it as qualitative: assuming that the three levels can show qualitative differences.



In the coming chapters, we will come back to this distinction. Remember, in the coming chapters we will only speak of quantitative and qualitative treatment of variables, and remember that continuous variables are always treated as quantitative and categorical data are always treated as qualitative.

### 1.1.3 Dependent and independent variables

So now that we have discussed the distinction between continuous, ordinal and categorical variables, let's turn to dependent and independent variables. Determining whether a variable is treated as independent or not, is often either a case of logic or a case of theory. When studying the relationship between the height of a father and that of his child, the more logical it would be to see the height of the child *as a function* of the height of the father. This because we assume that the genes are transferred from the father to the child. The father comes first, and the height of the child is partly the *result* of the genes that were transmitted during fertilisation. Similarly, when predicting precipitation on the basis of the hours of sun light on the previous day, it seems natural to study the effect of hours of sunlight on the previous day on precipitation on the next day. That which is the result is usually taken as the dependent variable. The theoretical cause or antecedent is usually taken as the independent variable. The dependent variable is often called the *response variable*. An independent variable is often called a *predictor variable* or simply *predictor*.

Examples: the effect of income on health  
size is caused by inflation  
size is influenced by weight  
shoe size is predicted by sex

### Exercises

From each of the following statements, identify the dependent variable and the independent variable:

The less you drink the more thirsty you become  
The more calories you eat, the more you weigh  
Weight is affected by food intake  
Weight is affected by exercise  
Food intake is predicted by time of year  
There is an effect of exercise on heart rate  
Inflation leads to higher wages  
Unprotected sex leads to pregnancy  
HIV-infection is caused by unprotected sex  
The effect of alcohol intake on driving performance  
Sunshine causes growth

## 1.2 Distributions

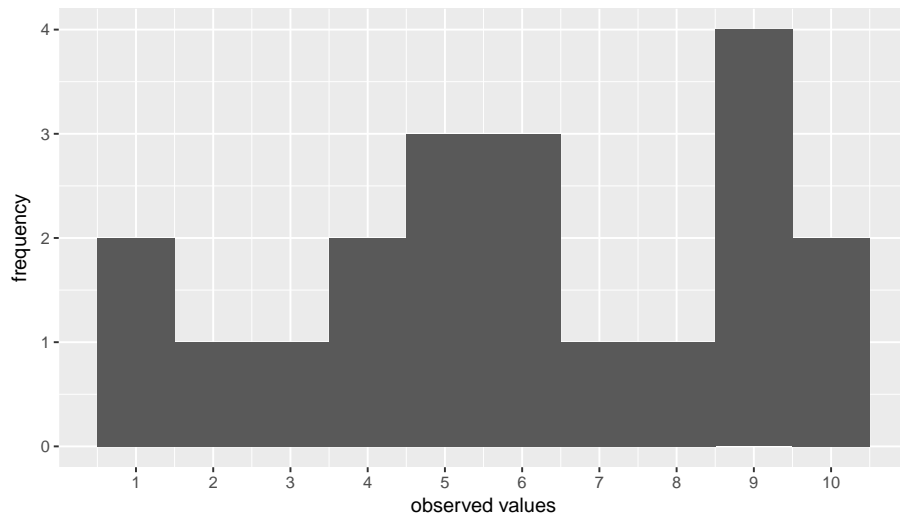


Figure 1.1: A frequency distribution

Variables have distributions. That means that if you put all the values you observed in order from low to high, you see a certain shape. For example, take the set of following numbers: 4, 8, 5, 9, 9, 1, 6, 9, 6, 5, 10, 5, 7, 6, 2, 9, 3, 1, 4, 10. If you plot these values on the horizontal axis, and how often they are observed (the frequency or count) on the y-axis you get the frequency plot in Figure 1.1.

Often a histogram is plotted. A histogram is very much like a frequency plot, except that its surface area adds up to one. For example, in Figure 1.1, the total area is equal to the total observed numbers, which is 20. If we divide all observed frequencies by 20, we get the plot in Figure 1.2.

This is called a histogram. We immediately see that 20% of the observations is a value of 9, and values of 5 make up 15% of the observations.

Figure 1.2 shows a histogram with 11 bins. Figure 1.3 we use the same data, but use only 5 bins: for the first bin, we take values of 1 and 2, for the second bin we take values 3 and 4 together, etcetera, until we take values 9 and 10 for the fifth bin. For each bin, we compute how often we observe them and divide them by the total number of observations. Next we divide by the bin width. For example, we observe 4 nines and 2 tens, so 6 times a value of either 9 or 10. Dividing by the number of observations we get  $6/20 = 0.3$ . This proportion should be divided by 2, to get  $0.3/0.15 = 2$ . The binwidth is here 2: all values between 8.5 and 10.5 are taken to lie in the 5th bin. The distance between these values is  $10.5 - 8.5 = 2$ . We have to divide the proportion by the binwidth because we want the total area to sum to 1. For each bin, we take the binwidth and multiply it with its height (density), and sum these together.

When every observed value is unique, there is only one of it, then it's better

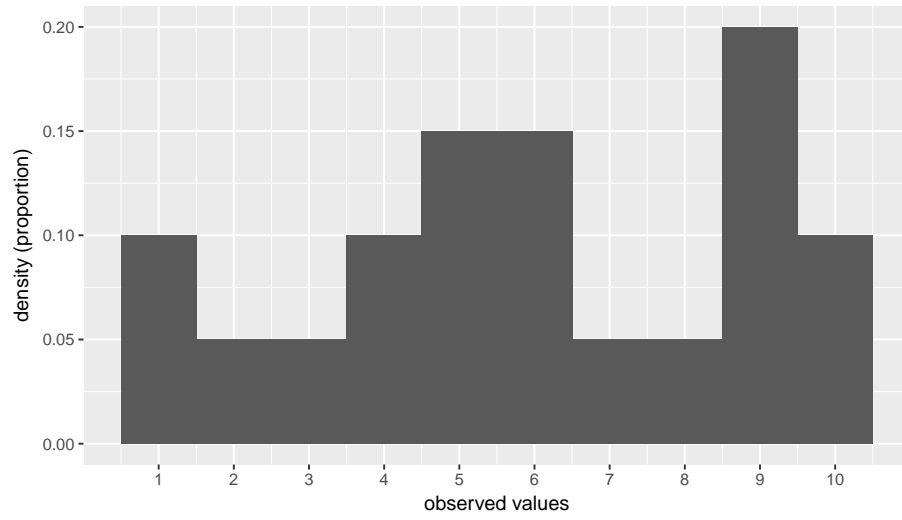


Figure 1.2: A histogram

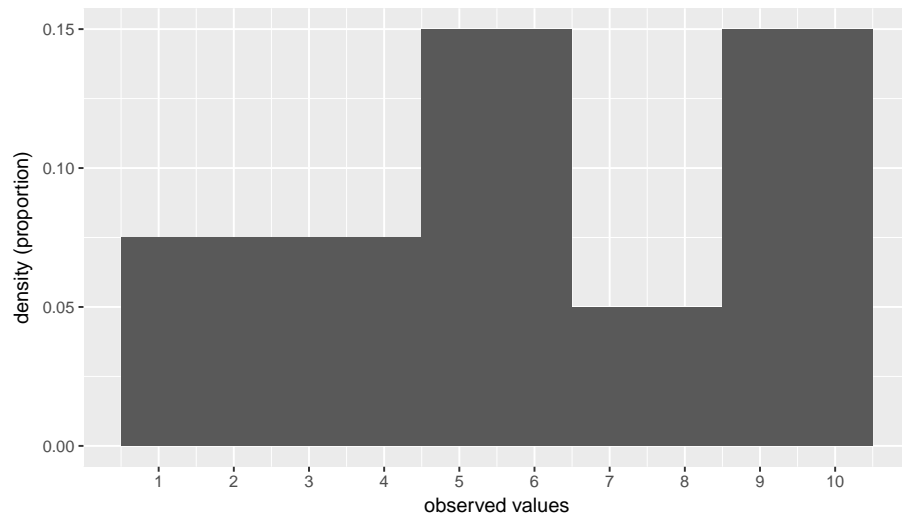


Figure 1.3: A histogram

to present a density: a line that shows how often values of more or less that value are observed, relative to other values.

Frequencies versus density.

uniform normal, z-scores briefly mention as examples: Student's t, chi-square, poisson

## 1.3 Mean, median and mode

### 1.3.1 The mean

The mean of set of values is the same as the average. Suppose we have the values 1, 2 and 3, then we compute the mean (or average) by first adding these numbers and then divide them by the number of values we have. In this case we have three values, so the mean is equal to  $(1 + 2 + 3)/3 = 2$ . In statistical formulas, the mean is indicated by a bar above the variable. So if our values of variable  $y$  are 1, 2 and 3, then we denote the mean by  $\bar{y}$  (pronounced as y-bar). For taking the sum of a set of values, statistical formulas show a  $\Sigma$  (pronounced as sigma). So we often see the following formula for the mean of a set of  $n$  values for variable  $y$ :

$$\bar{y} = \frac{\sum_i^n y_i}{n} \quad (1.1)$$

In words, we take every value for  $y$  from 1 to  $n$  and sum them, and the result is divided by  $n$ .

### 1.3.2 The median

The mean is a measure of central tendency: if the mean is 100, it means the values tend to cluster around this value. A different measure of central tendency is the median. The median is nothing but the middle value. Suppose we have the values 45, 567, and 23. Then what value lies in the middle? Let's first order them from small to large to get a better look, then we get 23, 45 and 567. Then the value in the middle is of course 45.

Suppose we have the values 45, 45, 45, 65, and 23. What is the middle value? We first order them again and see what is in the middle: 23, 45, 45, 45 and 65. Obviously now 45 is the median.

What if we have two values in the middle? Suppose we have the values 46, 56, 45 and 34. If we order them we get 34, 45, 46 and 56. Now there are two values in the middle: 45 and 46. In that case, we take the average of these two middle values, so the median is 45.5.

### 1.3.3 The mode

A third measure of central tendency is the *mode*. The mode is defined as the value that we see most frequently in a series of values. For example, if we have

the series 4, 7, 5, 5, 6, 6, 6, 4, then the value observed most often is 6 (three times).

## 1.4 Variance

Suppose we measure the height of 3 children and their heights (in cms) are 120, 120, 120. There is no variation in height: all heights are the same. There are no differences. Then the average height is 120, the median height is 120, and the mode is 120.

Now suppose their heights are 119, 120, 120. Now there are differences: one child is smaller than the other two, who have the same height. There is some variation now. We know how to quantify the mean, which is 119.6666667, we know how to quantify the median, which is 120, and we know how to quantify the mode, which is also 120. But how do we quantify the variation? Is there a lot of variation, or just a little, and how do we measure it?

One way you could think of is measuring the distance between the lowest value and the highest value. This we call the *range*. The lowest value is 119, and the highest value is 120, so the range of the data is equal to  $120 - 119 = 1$ . As another example, suppose we have the values 20, 20, 21, 20, 19, 20 and 454. Then the range is equal to  $454 - 19 = 435$ . That's a large range, for a series of values that for the most part hardly differ from another. Another measure for spread is *variance*, and variance is based on the *sum of squares*.

### 1.4.1 Sum of squares

What we call a sum of square is actually a sum of squared deviations. But deviations from what? First we have to know whether we are interested in the spread around what value. For instance we could be interested in how far the values 119.6666667 deviate from 0. The first differs 119, and the second and third differ 120. All values differ in a positive sense from 0: all values are positive. The deviations from zero are then 119, 120 and 120. Squaring these, we get the squared deviations,  $119^2$ ,  $120^2$  and  $120^2$  so 14161, 14400 and 14400. Adding these squared deviations, we obtain 42961 as the sum of squares.

We could also be interested in how much the values 119.6666667 vary around the *mean* of these values. The first value differs  $119 - 119.6666667 = -0.6666667$ , the second value differs  $120 - 119.6666667 = 0.3333333$ , and the third value also differs  $120 - 119.6666667 = 0.3333333$ .

Always when we look at deviations from the mean, some deviations are positive and some deviations will be negative (except when there is no variation). If we want to measure variation, it should not matter whether deviations are positive or negative: any deviation should add to the total variation in a positive way. So that is why we should better make all deviations positive, and this is done by taking the square of the deviations. So for our three values 119, 120 and 120, we get the deviations -0.67, +0.33 and +0.33, and if we square these

deviations, we get  $-0.67^2$ ,  $+0.33^2$  and  $+0.33^2$ , so -0.4489, 0.1089 and 0.1089. If we add these three squares, we obtain the sum  $-0.67^2 + 0.33^2 + 0.33^2 = -0.2311$ .

This is called the sum of squares, or  $SS$ . In most cases, the sum of squares refers to the sum of squared deviations from the mean. In brief, suppose you have  $n$  values of a variable  $y$ , you first take the mean of those values (this is  $\bar{y}$ ), you subtract this mean from each of these  $n$  values ( $y - \bar{y}$ ), then you take the squares of these deviations ( $(y - \bar{y})^2$ ), and then add them together (take the sum of these squared deviations,  $\Sigma(y - \bar{y})^2$ ). In formula form, this process looks like:

$$SS = \Sigma_i^n (y_i - \bar{y})^2 \quad (1.2)$$

As an example, suppose you have the values 10, 11 and 12, then the average value is 11. Then the deviations from the mean are -1, 0 and 1. If you square them you get 1, 0 and 1, and if you add these three values, you get  $SS = 2$ .

As another example, suppose you have the values 8, 10 and 12, then the average value is 10. Then the deviations from 10 are -2, 0 and +2. Taking the squares, you get 4, 0 and 4 and if you add them you get  $SS = 8$ .

Oftentimes, you are not interested in the total variation, but you're interested in the average variation: how much does the average value differ from the mean? Suppose we have the values 10, 11 and 24. The mean is then  $45/3 = 15$ . Then we have two values that are smaller than the average and one value that is larger than the average, so two negative deviations and one positive deviation. Squaring them makes them all positive. The squared deviations are 25, 16, and 81. So the third value has a huge squared deviation (81) compared to the other two values. If we take the *average* squared deviation, we get  $(25 + 16 + 81)/3 = 40.6666667$ . So the average squared deviation is equal to 40.6666667. This we call the *variance*. So the variance of a bunch of values is nothing but the  $SS$  divided by the number of values,  $n$ . The variance is *the average squared deviation from the mean*. The symbol used for the variance is usually  $\sigma^2$  (pronounced as "sigma squared").

$$\sigma^2 = \frac{SS}{n} = \frac{\Sigma_i^n (y_i - \bar{y})^2}{n} \quad (1.3)$$

As an example, suppose you have the values 10, 11 and 12, then the average value is 11. Then the deviations are -1, 0 and 1. If you square them you get 1, 0 and 1, and if you add these three values, you get  $SS = 2$ . If you divide this by 3, you get the variance: 0.67. Put differently, if the squared deviations are 1, 0 and 1, then the average squared deviation (i.e., the variance) is  $\frac{1+0+1}{3} = 0.67$ .

As another example, suppose you have the values 8, 10, 10 and 12, then the average value is 10. Then the deviations from 10 are -2, 0, 0 and +2. Taking the squares, you get 4, 0, 0 and 4 and if you add them you get  $SS = 8$ . To get the variance, you divide this by 4:  $8/4 = 2$ . Put differently, if the squared deviations are 4, 0, 0 and 4, then the average squared deviation (i.e., the variance) is  $\frac{4+0+0+4}{4} = 2$ .

Often we also see another measure of variation: the *standard deviation*. The standard deviation is nothing but the root of the variance and is therefore denoted as  $\sigma$ :

$$\sigma = \sqrt{\sigma^2} = \sqrt{\frac{\sum_i^n (y_i - \bar{y})^2}{n}} \quad (1.4)$$

## Chapter 2

# Linear modelling: introduction FULYA

- 2.1 Linear relationships
- 2.2 Pearson correlation
- 2.3 Simple regression with a continuous predictor
- 2.4 Predicting the dependent variable



## Chapter 3

# Multivariate regression

### 3.1 Explained and unexplained variance

In the previous chapter we have seen relationships between two variables: one dependent variable and one independent variable. The dependent variable we usually denote as  $y$ , and the independent variable we denote by  $x$ . The relationship was modelled by a linear equation: an equation with an intercept  $b_0$  and a slope parameter  $b_1$ :

$$y = b_0 + b_1x \quad (3.1)$$

Further, we argued that in most cases, the relationship between  $x$  and  $y$  cannot be completely described by a straight line. Not all of the variation in  $y$  can be explained by the variation in  $x$ . Therefore, we have *residuals*  $e$ : the difference between the  $y$ -values that are predicted by the straight line, (denoted by  $\hat{y}$ ), and the observed  $y$ -value:

$$e = \hat{y} - y \quad (3.2)$$

Therefore, the relationship between  $x$  and  $y$  is denoted by a regression equation, where the relationship is approached by a linear equation, plus a residual part  $e$ :

$$y = b_0 + b_1x + e \quad (3.3)$$

The linear equation only gives us only the expected  $y$ -value,  $\hat{y}$ :

$$\hat{y} = b_0 + b_1x \quad (3.4)$$

We've also seen that the residual  $e$  is assumed to have a normal distribution, with mean 0 and variance  $\sigma^2$ :

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma^2) \quad (3.5)$$

Remember that linear models are used to explain (or predict) the variation in  $y$ : why are there both high values of  $y$  and some low values? Where does the variance in  $y$  come from? Well, the linear model tells us that the variation is in part explained by the variation in  $x$ . If  $b_1$  is positive, we predict a relatively high value for  $y$  for a high value of  $x$ , and we predict a relatively low value for  $y$  if we have a low value for  $x$ . If  $b_1$  is negative, it is of course in the opposite direction. Thus, the variance in  $y$  is in part explained by the variance in  $x$ , and the rest of the variance can only be explained by the residuals  $e$ .

$$Var(y) = Var(\hat{y}) + Var(e) = Var(b_0 + b_1x) + \sigma^2 \quad (3.6)$$

Because the residuals do not explain anything (we don't know where these residuals come from), we say that the *explained* variance of  $y$  is only that part of the variance that is explained by independent variable  $x$ :  $Var(b_0 + b_1x)$ . The *unexplained* variance of  $y$  is the variance of the residuals,  $\sigma^2$ . The explained variance is often denoted by a ratio: the explained variance divided by the total variance of  $y$ :

$$Var_{explained} = \frac{Var(b_0 + b_1x)}{Var(y)} = \frac{Var(b_0 + b_1x)}{Var(b_0 + b_1x) + \sigma^2} \quad (3.7)$$

From this equation we see that if the variance of the residuals is large, then the explained variance is small. If the variance of the residuals is small, the variance explained is large.

## 3.2 More than one predictor

In regression analysis, and in linear models in general, we try to make the explained variance as large as possible. In other words, we try to minimize the residual variance,  $\sigma^2$ .

One way to do that is to use a second independent variable. If not all of the variance in  $y$  is explained by  $x$ , then why not try an extra independent variable?

Let's use an example with data on the weight of books, the size of books (area), and the volume of books. Let's try first to predict the weight of a book, *weight*, on the basis of the volume of the book, *volume*. Suppose we find the following regression equation and a value for  $\sigma^2$ :

$$weight = 107.7 + 0.71 \times volume + e \quad (3.8)$$

$$e \sim N(0, 15362) \quad (3.9)$$

In the data set, we see that the variance of the weight,  $Var(weight)$  is equal to 72274. Since we also know the variance of the residuals, we can solve for the variance explained by **volume**:

$$\begin{aligned} Var(weight) &= 72274 = Var(107.7 + 0.7 \times volume) + 15362 \\ Var(107.7 + 0.7 \times volume) &= 72274 - 15362 = 56912 \end{aligned}$$

So the proportion of explained variance is equal to  $\frac{56912}{72274} = 0.7874478$ . This is quite a high proportion: nearly all of the variation in the number of houses per city is explained by how many inhabitants a city has.

But let's see if we can explain even more variance if we add an extra independent variable. Suppose we know the area of each book. We expect that books with a large area weigh more. Our linear equation might look like this:

$$weight = 22.4 + 0.71 \times volume + 0.5 \times area + e \quad (3.10)$$

$$e \sim N(0, 6031) \quad (3.11)$$

How much of the variance in weight does this equation explain? The proportion of explained variance is equal to  $\frac{66243}{72274} = 0.9165537$ . So the proportion of explained variance has increased!

Note that the variance of the residuals has decreased; this is the main reason why the proportion of explained variance has increased. By adding the extra independent variable, we can explain some of the variance that without this variable could not be explained! In summary, by adding independent variables to a regression equation, we can explain more of the variance of the dependent variable. A regression analysis with more than one independent variable we call *multiple regression*. Regression with only one independent variable is often called *simple regression*.

### 3.3 R-squared

With regression analysis, we try to explain variance of the dependent variable. With multiple regression, we use more than one independent variable to try to explain this variance. In regression analysis, we use the term R-squared to refer to the proportion of explained variance, usually with the symbol  $R^2$ . The unexplained variance is of course the variance of the residuals,  $Var(e)$ , usually denoted as  $\sigma_e^2$ . So suppose the variance of dependent variable  $y$  equals 100, and the residual variance in a regression equation equals say 80, then  $R^2$  or the proportion of explained variance is  $(100 - 80)/100 = 0.20$ .

$$R^2 = \sigma_{explained}^2 / \sigma_y^2 = (1 - \sigma_{unexplained}^2) / \sigma_y^2 = (1 - \sigma_e^2) / \sigma_y^2 \quad (3.12)$$

This is the definition of R-squared at the population level, where we know the exact values of the variances. However, regression analysis is most often based on a random sample of the population, and we don't know the values exactly, we can only try to estimate them.

For  $\sigma_y^2$  we take as an adjusted estimate the variance of  $y$  in our sample data,  $Var(y)$ , which is calculated by

$$\widehat{\sigma_y^2} = \frac{\sum (y - \bar{y})^2}{n - 1} \quad (3.13)$$

where  $n$  is sample size. We divide by  $n - 1$  and not by  $n$ , because we want to estimate the variance of  $y$  in the population data.

For  $\sigma_e^2$  we take as an adjusted estimate the variance of the residuals  $e$  in our sample data,  $\text{Var}(e)$ , which is calculated by

$$\widehat{\sigma_e^2} = \frac{\Sigma e^2}{n - 1} \quad (3.14)$$

Here we do not have to subtract the mean of the residuals, because this is 0 by definition.

So our estimate for  $R^2$  in the population is then

$$\begin{aligned} \widehat{R^2} &= \frac{\frac{\Sigma(y-\bar{y})^2}{n-1} - \frac{\Sigma e^2}{n-1}}{\frac{\Sigma(y-\bar{y})^2}{n-1}} \\ &= \frac{\Sigma(y - \bar{y})^2 - \Sigma e^2}{\Sigma(y - \bar{y})^2} = 1 - \frac{SSE}{SST} \end{aligned} \quad (3.15)$$

where SST refers to the total sum of squares.

As we saw previously, in a regression analysis, the intercept and slope parameters are found by minimizing the sum of squares of the residuals,  $SSE$ . Since the variance of the residuals is based on this sum of squares, in any regression analysis, the variance of the residuals is always as small as possible. The values of the parameters for which the  $SSE$  (and by consequence the variance) is smallest, are the least squares regression parameters. And if the variance of the residuals is always minimized in a regression analysis, the explained variance is always maximized!

Because in any least squares regression analysis based on a sample of data, the explained variance is always maximized, we may overestimate the variance explained in the population data. Therefore very often in regression analysis we use an *adjusted R-squared* that takes this possible overestimation (*inflation*) into account. The adjustment is based on the number of independent variables and sample size.

The formula is

$$R_{adj}^2 = 1 - (1 - R^2) \frac{n - 1}{n - p - 1}$$

where  $n$  is sample size and  $p$  is the number of independent variables. For example, if  $R^2$  equals 0.10 and we have a sample size of 100 and 2 independent variables, the adjusted  $R^2$  is equal to  $1 - (1 - 0.10) \frac{100-1}{100-2-1} = 1 - (0.90) \frac{99}{97} = 0.08$ . Thus the estimated proportion of variance explained at population level equals 0.08. Remember that the adjusted R-squared is *never larger* than the unadjusted R-squared.

### 3.4 Multicollinearity

In general, if you add independent variables to a regression equation, the proportion explained variance,  $R^2$ , increases. Suppose you have the following three regression equations:

$$weight = b_0 + b_1 \times volume + e \quad (3.16)$$

$$weight = b_0 + b_1 \times area + e \quad (3.17)$$

$$weight = b_0 + b_1 \times volume + b_1 \times area + e \quad (3.18)$$

If we carry out these three analyses, we obtain an  $R^2$  of 0.8026346 if we only use **volume** as predictor, and an  $R^2$  of 0.1268163 if we only use **area** as predictor. So perhaps you'd think that if we take both **volume** and **area** as predictors in the model, we would get an  $R^2$  of  $0.8026346 + 0.1268163 = 0.9294509$ . However, if we carry out the multiple regression with **volume** and **area**, we obtain an  $R^2$  of 0.9284738, which is slightly less! This is not a rounding error, but the result of the fact that there is a correlation between the volume of a book and the area of a book. Here it is a tiny correlation of  $round(cor(allbacksarea, allbacksvolume), 3)$ , but nevertheless it affects the proportion of variance explained when you use both these variables.

Let's look at what happens when independent variables are strongly correlated. Table 3.1 shows measurements on a breed of seals (only measurements on the first 6 seals are shown). Often, the age of an animal is gaged from its weight: we assume that heavier seals are older than lighter seals. If we carry out a simple regression analysis, we get the following equation:

Table 3.1: Part of Cape Fur Seal Data.

| age   | weight | heart  |
|-------|--------|--------|
| 33.00 | 27.50  | 127.70 |
| 10.00 | 24.30  | 93.20  |
| 10.00 | 22.00  | 84.50  |
| 10.00 | 18.50  | 85.40  |
| 12.00 | 28.00  | 182.00 |
| 18.00 | 23.80  | 130.00 |

$$age = 11.4 + 0.82 \times weight + e \quad (3.19)$$

$$e \sim N(0, 200) \quad (3.20)$$

USE regression table instead of formula

From the data we calculate the variance of age, and we find that it is 1090.8551724. The variance of the residuals is 200, so that the proportion of explained variance is  $(1090.8551724 - 200)/1090.8551724 = 0.8166576$ .

Since we also have data on the weight of the heart alone, we could try to predict the age from the weight of the heart. Then we get:

$$age = 20.6 + 0.11 \times heart + e \quad (3.21)$$

$$e \sim N(0, 307) \quad (3.22)$$

USE regression table instead of formula

Here the variance of the residuals is 307, so the proportion of explained variance is  $(1090.8551724 - 370)/1090.8551724 = 0.6608166$ .

Now let's see what happens if we include both total weight and weight of the heart into the linear model. This results in the following model equation:

$$age = 10.3 + 0.99 \times weight - 0.03 \times heart + e \quad (3.23)$$

$$e \sim N(0, 204) \quad (3.24)$$

USE regression table instead of formula

Here we see that the regression parameter for total weight has increased from 0.82 to 0.99. At the same time, the regression parameter for the weight of the heart has decreased, has even become negative, from 0.11 to -0.03. From this equation we see that there is a strong relationship between the total weight and the age of a seal, but on top of that, for every unit increase in the weight of the heart, there is a very small decrease in the expected age. In fact, we find that the effect of **heart** is no longer significant, so we could say that on top of the effect of total weight, there is no remaining relationship between the weight of the heart and age. In other words, once we can use the total weight of a seal, there is no more information coming from the weight of the heart.

This is because the total weight of a seal and the weight of its heart are strongly correlated: heavy seals have generally heavy hearts. Here the correlation turns out to be 0.9587873, almost perfect! If you know the weight of seal, you practically know the weight of the heart. This is logical of course, since the total weight is a composite of all the weights of all the parts of the animal: the total weight variable *includes* the weight of the heart.

Here we have seen, that if we use multiple regression, we should be aware of how strongly the independent variables are correlated. Heavily correlated predictor variables do not add extra predictive power. Worse: they can cause problems in estimating regression parameters because it becomes hard to tell which variable is more important: if they are strongly correlated (positive or negative), than they measure almost the same thing!

When two predictor variables are perfectly correlated, either 1 or -1, estimation is no longer possible, the software stops and you get a warning. We call such a situation *multiple collinearity*. But also if the correlation is close to 1 or -1, you should be very careful interpreting the regression parameters. You will then see there are very wide confidence intervals (very large standard errors). If this happens, try to find out what variables are highly correlated, and select the variable that makes most sense.

In our seal data, there is a very high correlation between the variables **heart** and **weight** that results in estimation problems and very large standard errors (wide confidence intervals), so a lot of uncertainty. The standard errors were about 3 times as large with the multiple regression than with simple regressions. It makes therefore more sense to use only the total weight variable, since when seals get older, *all* their organs and limbs get larger, not just their heart.

### 3.5 Multiple regression in SPSS

Let's use the book data and run the multiple regression in SPSS. The syntax looks very similar to simple regression, except that we now specify two independent variables, volume and area, instead of one.

```
UNIANOVA weight WITH volume area
  /DESIGN = volume area
  /PRINT = PARAMETER R-Squared.
```

| Tests of Between-Subjects Effects |                         |    |             |         |      |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------|----|-------------|---------|------|
| Dependent Variable: weight        |                         |    |             |         |      |
| Source                            | Type III Sum of Squares | df | Mean Square | F       | Sig. |
| Corrected Model                   | 939460.71 <sup>a</sup>  | 2  | 469730.354  | 77.885  | .000 |
| Intercept                         | 888.274                 | 1  | 888.274     | .147    | .708 |
| volume                            | 811143.719              | 1  | 811143.719  | 134.495 | .000 |
| area                              | 127328.290              | 1  | 127328.290  | 21.112  | .001 |
| Error                             | 72372.626               | 12 | 6031.052    |         |      |
| Total                             | 8502500.00              | 15 |             |         |      |
| Corrected Total                   | 1011833.33              | 14 |             |         |      |

a. R Squared = .928 (Adjusted R Squared = .917)

| Parameter Estimates        |        |            |        |      |                         |             |
|----------------------------|--------|------------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
| Dependent Variable: weight |        |            |        |      |                         |             |
| Parameter                  | B      | Std. Error | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|                            |        |            |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept                  | 22.413 | 58.402     | .384   | .708 | -104.835                | 149.661     |
| volume                     | .708   | .061       | 11.597 | .000 | .575                    | .841        |
| area                       | .468   | .102       | 4.595  | .001 | .246                    | .691        |

Figure 3.1: SPSS output of a linear model (multiple regression) for predicting the weight of books.

Figure 3.1 shows the output. There we see an intercept, a slope parameter for volume and a slope parameter for area. These numbers tell us that the expected or predicted weight of a book that has a volume of 0 and an area of

0 is 22.413. For every unit increase in volume, the predicted weight increases by 0.708, and for every unit increase in area, the predicted weight increases by 0.468.

So the linear model looks like:

$$weight = 22.413 + 0.708 \times volume + 0.468 \times area + e \quad (3.25)$$

Thus, the predicted weight of a book that has a volume of 10 and an area of 5, the expected weight is equal to  $22.413 + 0.708 \times 10 + 0.468 \times 5 = 31.833$ .

In the output, there is also another table, and there we see the R-squared and the Adjusted R-squared. In Figure 3.1 we see that the R squared is equal to 0.928. As seen earlier, this value can be computed from the sums of squares:  $(SST - SSE)/SST$ . From the table we see that the SST is 8502500 (corrected total sum of squares)<sup>1</sup>, and the SSE is 72372.626. If we do the math, we see that we get  $(1011833 - 72372.626)/1011833 = 0.928$ .

## 3.6 Simpson's paradox

With multiple regression, you may uncover very surprising relationships between two variables, that can never be found using simple regression. Here's an example from Paul van der Laken<sup>2</sup>, who simulated a data set on the topic of Human Resources (HR).

Assume you run a company of 1000 employees and you have asked all of them to fill out a Big Five personality survey. Per individual, you therefore have a score depicting his/her personality characteristic Neuroticism, which can run from 0 (not at all neurotic) to 7 (very neurotic). Now you are interested in the extent to which this **Neuroticism** of employees relates to their **salary** (measured in Euros per year).

We carry out a simple regression, with salary as our dependent variable and Neuroticism as our independent variable. We then find the following regression equation:

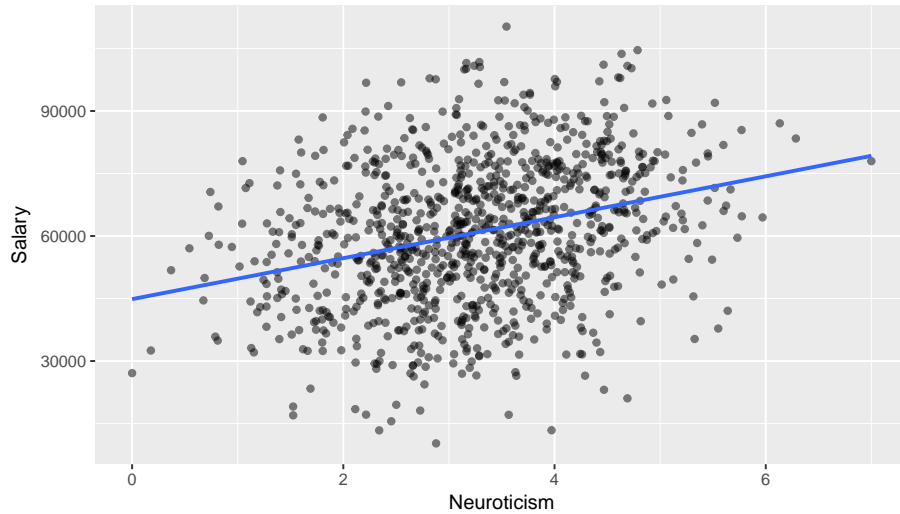
$$salary = 44857 + 4912 \times Neuroticism + e \quad (3.26)$$

Figure ?? shows the data and the regression line. From this visualizations it would look like Neuroticism relates significantly and *positively* to their yearly salary: the more neurotic people earn more salary than less neurotic people.

<sup>1</sup>In SPSS, the total sum of squares reports the sum of the squared deviations from 0, whereas the *corrected* total sum of squares reports the squared deviations from the mean of the dependent variable,  $\bar{y}$

<sup>2</sup><https://paulvanderlaken.com/2017/09/27/simpsons-paradox-two-hr-examples-with-r-code/>





Now we run a multiple regression analysis. We assume that one very important cause of how much people earn is their educational background. If we include both Education and Neuroticism as independent variables and run the analysis, we obtain the following regression equation:

$$salary = 50249 - 3176 \times Neuroticism + 20979 \times Education + e \quad (3.27)$$

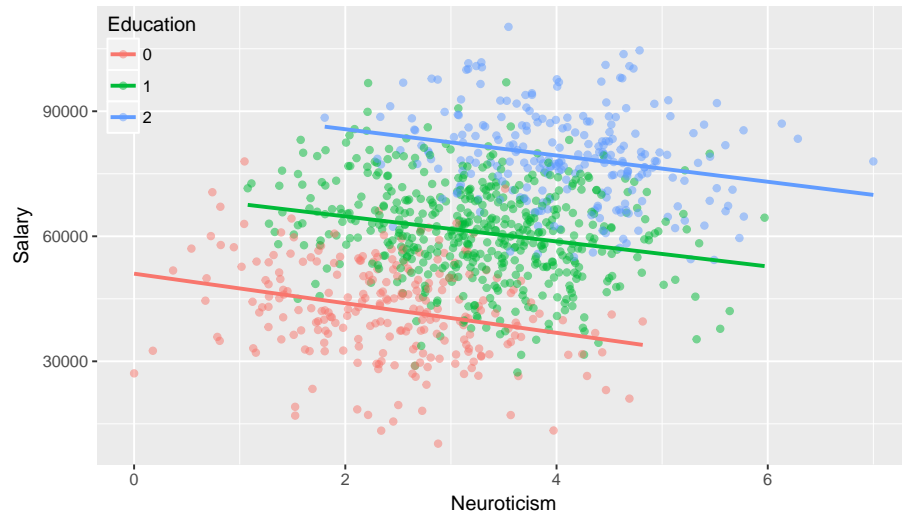
Note that we now find a *negative* slope parameter for the effect of Neuroticism! This implies there is a relationship in the data where neurotic employees earn *less* than their less neurotic colleagues! How can we reconcile this seeming paradox: which result should we trust: the one from the simple regression, or the one from the multiple regression?

The answer is: neither. Or perhaps: both! Both analyses give us different information.

Let's look at the last equation more closely. Suppose we make a prediction for a person with a low educational background (Education=0). Then the equation tells us that the expected salary of a person with neuroticism score of 0 is around 50249, and of a person with a neuroticism score of 7 is around 28019. So for employees with low education, the more neurotic employees earn less! If we do the same exercise for average education and high education employees, we find exactly the same pattern: for each unit increase in neuroticism, the yearly salary drops by 3176 Euros.

It is true that in this company, the more neurotic persons generally earn a higher salary. But if we take into account educational background, the relationship flips around. This can be seen from Figure ??: looking only at the people with a low educational background (Education=0), then the more neurotic people earn less than they less neurotic colleagues with a similar educational background. And the same is true for people with an average education (Education=1) and a high education (Education=3). Only when you put all employees

together in one group, you see a positive relationship between Neuroticism and salary.



Simpson's paradox tells us that we should always be careful when interpreting positive and negative correlations between two variables: what might be true at the total group level, might not be true at the level of smaller subgroups. Multiple linear regression helps us investigate correlations more deeply and uncover exciting relationships between multiple variables.

### 3.7 Exercises

Two neighbours, Elsa and John, are chopping trees in the forest for their respective fireplaces. They pick their trees to chop down, based on the expected volume of wood they can get from that tree. However, Elsa and John disagree on what is the most important aspect of trees for selection. Elsa believes that the tallest tree will give the biggest volume of wood for the fireplace, but John believes that the tree with the largest girth gives the most volume of wood. Luckily there is a data set with three variables: Volume, Girth and Height.

1. What would the SPSS syntax look like to run a multiple regression, if you want to find out which predictor is most important for the volume of wood that comes from a tree?

```
UNIANOVA ..... WITH .....  
  /DESIGN = .....  
  /PRINT = PARAMETER R-Squared.
```

2. Suppose you find the output in Table 3.2: what would your linear equation look like?

$$\dots\dots = \dots\dots\dots + e \quad (3.28)$$

Table 3.2: Regression table for predicting volume from height and girth.

|             | Estimate | Std. Error | t value | Pr(> t ) |
|-------------|----------|------------|---------|----------|
| (Intercept) | -57.9877 | 8.6382     | -6.71   | 0.0000   |
| Girth       | 4.7082   | 0.2643     | 17.82   | 0.0000   |
| Height      | 0.3393   | 0.1302     | 2.61    | 0.0145   |

3. On the basis of the output, what would be the predicted volume for a tree with a height of 10 and a girth of 5?
4. On the basis of the output, what would be the predicted volume for a tree with a height of 5 and a girth of 10?
5. For each unit increase of height, how much does the volume increase? Give the approximate 95% confidence interval for this increase.
6. For each unit increase of girth, how much does the volume increase? Give the approximate 95% confidence interval for this increase.
7. On the basis of the SPSS output, do you think Lisa is right in saying that height is an important predictor of volume? Explain your answer.
8. On the basis of the SPSS output, do you think John is right in saying that girth is an important predictor of volume? Explain your answer.
9. On the basis of the plots in Figures 3.2 and 3.3, which do you think is the most reliable predictor for Volume: Height or Girth? Explain your answer.
10. How large is the proportion of variance explained in volume, by girth and height?
11. How would you summarize this multiple regression analysis in a research report?

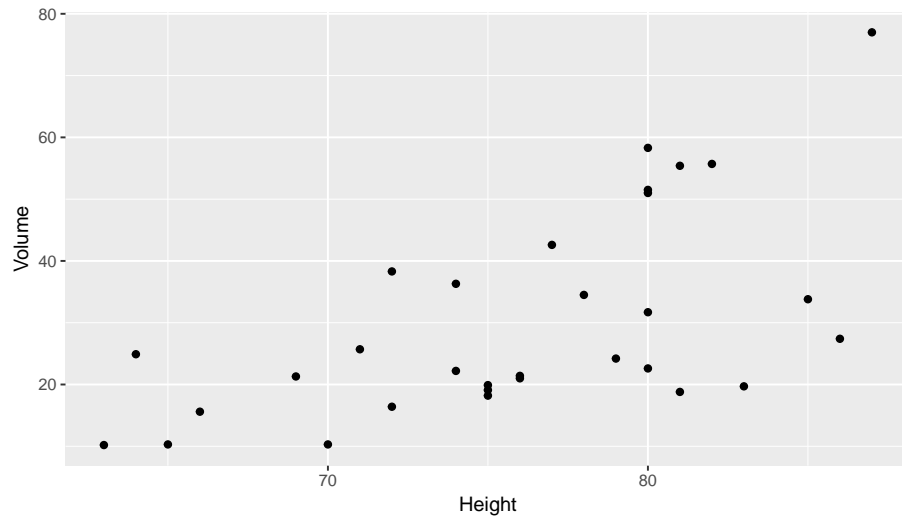


Figure 3.2: A scatterplot for the relationship between height and volume of a tree.

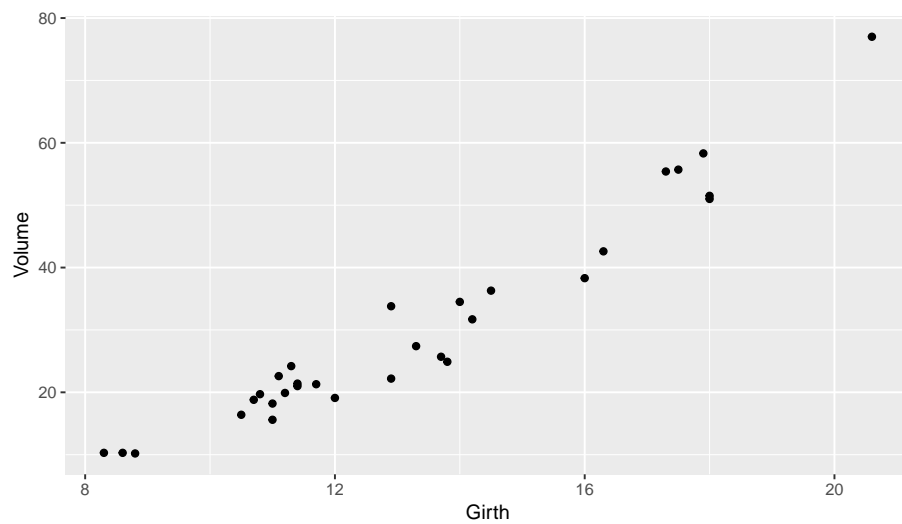


Figure 3.3: A scatterplot for the relationship between girth and volume of a tree.

## Chapter 4

# Inference I: random samples, standard errors and confidence intervals

In the previous chapters on simple and multiple regression we have seen how a linear equation can describe a data set: the linear equation describes the behaviour of one variable, the dependent variable, on the basis of one or more other variables, the independent variables. Sometimes we are indeed interested in the relationship between variables in one given data set. For instance, a teacher wants to know whether her exam gradings in her class of last year predict how well they do in a second course a year later.

But very often, researchers are not interested in the relationships between variables in one data set, but interested in the relationship between variables in general, not limited to only the observed data. For example, a researcher would like to know what the relationship is between the temperature in a brewery and the volume of beer that goes into one bottle. In order to study the effect of temperature on volume, the researcher measures the volume of beer in 200 bottles and determines from log files the temperature in the factory during production for each measured bottle. The researcher might find a small effect of temperature ( $t$ ) on the volume of beer in the 200 produced bottles. The linear equation might be  $volume = 31.7225839 - 0.0879535 \times t + e$ , see Figure 4.1. But the question is what the effect of temperature is in *all* bottles.

In other words, we might have data on a sample of bottles, but we might really be interested to know whether there is an effect *had we been able to measure the volume in all bottles*.

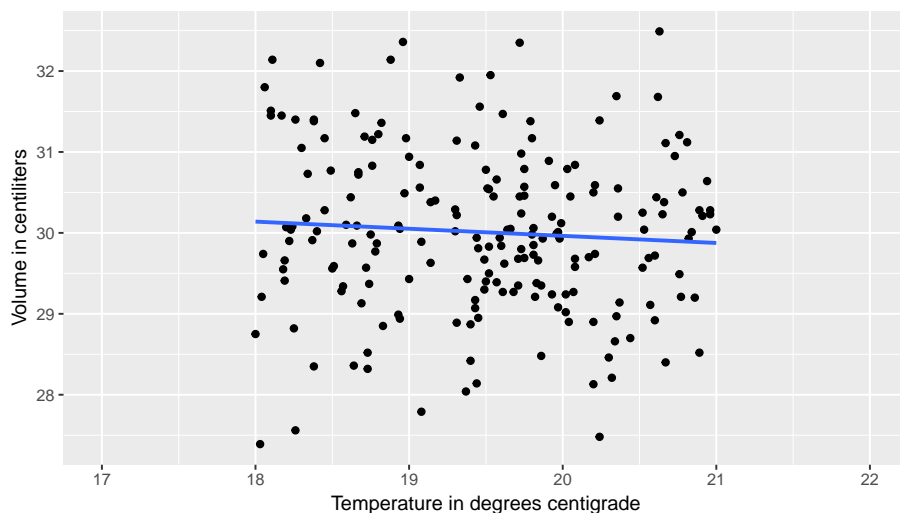


Figure 4.1: The relationship between temperature and volume in a sample of 200 bottles.

## 4.1 Population data and sample data

In the beer bottle example above, the volume of beer was measured in a total of 200 bottles. Let's do a thought experiment. Suppose we could have access to volume data about all bottles of beer on all days where the factory was operating, including information about the temperature for each day of production. Suppose that the total number of bottles produced is 80,000 bottles. When we plot the volume of each bottle against the temperature of the factory we get the scatter plot in Figure 4.2.

In our thought experiment, we could determine the regression equation using all bottles that were produced: all 80,000 of them. We then find the blue regression line displayed in Figure 4.2. Its equation is  $Volume = 29.9769894 + 0.0012583 \times t$ .

However, in the data example above, data was only collected on 200 bottles. These bottles were randomly selected: there were many more bottles but we could measure only a limited number of them. This explains why the regression equation based on the sample differed from the regression equation based on all bottles: we only see part of the data.

Here we see a discrepancy between the regression equation based on the sample, and the regression equation based on the population. Here, the *population* is the collection of all bottles produced in the factory. The *sample* is the collection of 200 randomly selected bottles. Here we have a slope of 0.0012583 in the population, and we see a slope of -0.0879535 in the sample. To distinguish between the two, the population slope is often denoted by the Greek letter  $\beta$  and the sample slope by the Roman letter  $b$ .

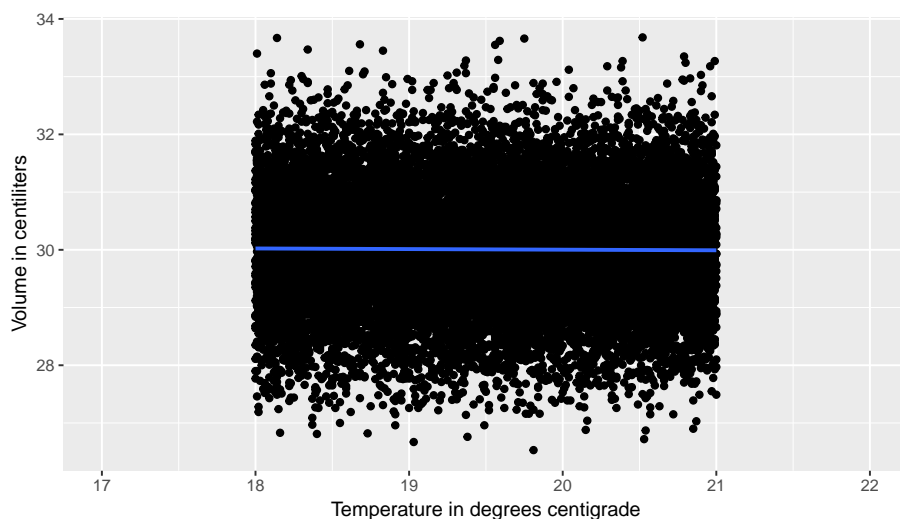


Figure 4.2: The relationship between temperature and volume in all 80,000 bottles.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Population : Volume} &= 29.9769894 + 0.0012583 \times t \\ \text{Sample : Volume} &= 31.7225839 - 0.0879535 \times t \end{aligned}$$

The discrepancy here is simply the result of chance: had we selected another sample of 200 bottles, we probably would have found a different linear equation with a different slope. The intercept and slope based on sample data, are the result of chance. The population intercept and slope (the true ones) are fixed, but unknown. If we want to know something about the population intercept and slope, we only have the sample equation to go on. Our best guess for the population equation is the sample equation, but how certain can we be about how close the sample intercept and slope are to the population intercept and slope?

## 4.2 Random sampling and the standard error

In order to know how close the intercept and slope in a sample are to their values in the population, we do another thought experiment. Let's see what happens if we take more than one random sample of 200 bottles. With random, we mean that every bottle has the same chance of being picked.

We put the 200 bottles that we selected earlier back into the population and we again blindly pick a new collection of 200 bottles. We then measure for each bottle the volume of beer it contains and we determine the temperature of the factory on the day of its production. We then apply a regression analysis and

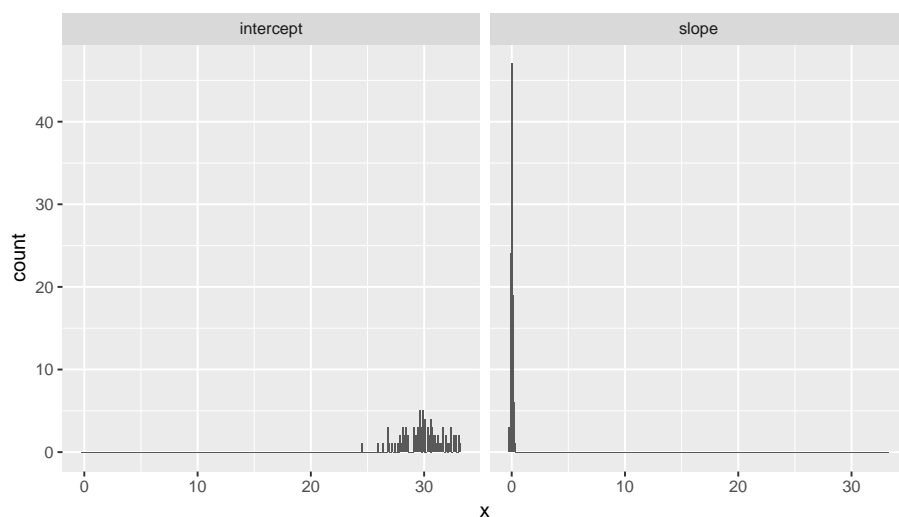


Figure 4.3: Distribution of the sample mean when population variance is 225 and sample size equals 200.

determine the intercept and the slope. Next, we put these bottles back into the population and draw a next random sample of 200 bottles.

You can probably imagine that if we repeat this procedure of randomly picking 200 bottles from a large population of 80,000, each time we find a different intercept and a different slope. Let's carry out this procedure 100 times by a computer. If we then plot the 100 sample intercepts and sample slopes we get the picture in Figure 4.3.

We see a large variation in the intercepts that we find, and only a small variation in the slopes (all values very close to 0).

For now, let's focus on the slope; this because we are mostly interested to know whether there is a relationship between volume and temperature, but everything that follows also applies to the intercept. In Figure 4.4 we see the histogram of the slopes if we carry out the random sampling 1000 times.

If we look at the distribution of the 1000 sample slopes in Figure 4.4, we see that on average the sample slope is around 0.0012583, which is the population slope (the slope if we analyse all bottles). But there is variation around that mean of 0: the standard deviation of all 1000 sample slopes turns out to be 0.0840496.

The standard deviation of the sample mean is called the 0.0012583. Had the population slope been 110 or -40, the sample slopes would cluster around 110 or -40, but the standard deviation of the sample slopes, the standard error, would be the same.

The standard error for a sample slope represents the uncertainty about the population slope. If the standard error is large, it means that if we would draw



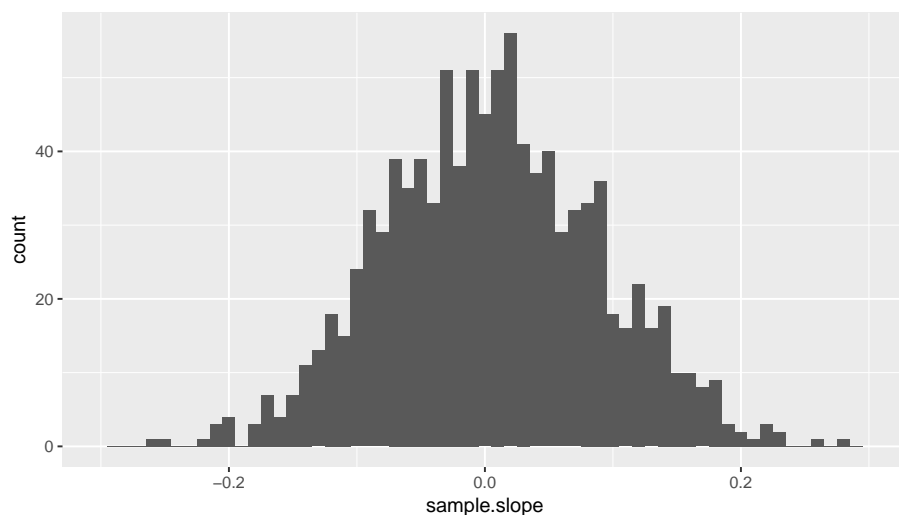


Figure 4.4: Distribution of the sample mean when population variance is 225 and sample size equals 200.

many different random samples from the same population data, we would get very different sample slopes. If the standard error is small, it means that if we would draw many different random samples from the same population data, we would get sample slopes that are very close to one another, and very close to the population slope.

It turns out that the standard error for a sample slope depends on many things, but the most important factor is the *sample size*: how many bottles there were in each random sample. In the above example, the sample size is 200 bottles.

Imagine that you draw only 2 bottles from a population of bottles. Then there is quite some probability that by sheer luck you find one bottle with a low temperature and a small volume, and another bottle with a high temperature and a large volume. This would yield a sample slope that is quite large and positive. But there is also an equally high probability that you get one bottle with a low temperature with a large volume, and another bottle with a high temperature and a small volume. Then based on these two other bottles, the sample slope will be large and negative. In case of a sample size of only 2, you see that there will be quite a lot of variation in the sample slope if we draw various random samples. This large variation in sample slopes is then captured by the standard error, that will be large. With only 2 bottles per sample, the uncertainty about the population slope will then also be large.

Now imagine that your sample size is 20. Then the probability that the 20 bottles will result in a large variation of slopes will be smaller: it would be very unlikely that *all* 20 bottles have either a high volume and a high temperature,

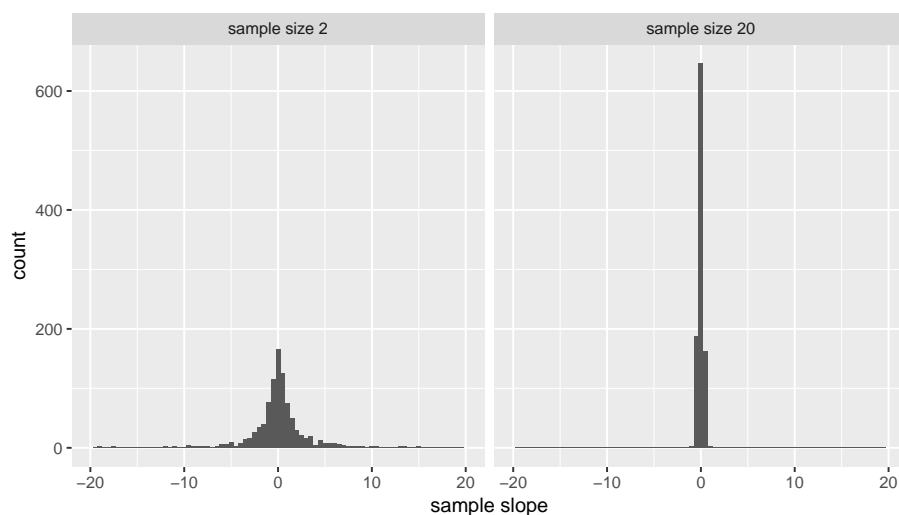


Figure 4.5: Distribution of the sample slope when sample size is 2 and when sample size is 20.

or a low volume and a low temperature. If there happen to be a few of such bottles in the sample, the other bottles will average these effects out. Because of this averaging effect, the slope based on 20 bottles will then be closer to the population slope. The standard error therefore decreases with increasing sample size.

In Figure 4.5 we see the distributions of the sample slope where the sample size is either 2 (left panel) or 20 (right panel). We see quite a lot of variation in sample slopes with sample size equal to 2, and considerably less variation in sample slopes if sample size is 20. This shows that the larger the sample size, the smaller the standard error, the larger the certainty about the population slope.

So if we have a small standard error, we can be relatively certain that our sample slope is close to the population slope. Above we've done a thought experiment where we knew everything about the population intercept and slope, and we drew 1000 samples from this population. In reality, we don't know anything about the population: we only have the sample data to go on. So suppose we draw a sample of 200 from an unknown population of bottles, and we find a slope of 1, we have to look at the standard error to know how close that sample slope is to the population slope.

For example, suppose we find a sample slope of 1 and the standard error is equal to 0.1. Then we know that the population slope is more likely to be in the neighbourhood of values like 0.9, 1, or 1.1 than in the neighbourhood of 10 or -10.

Now suppose we find a sample slope of 1 and the standard error is equal to

10. Then we know that the sample slope is more likely to be somewhere in the neighbourhood of values like -9, 1 or 11, than around values in the neighbourhood of -100 or +100. However, values like -9, 1 and 11 are quite far apart, so actually we have no idea where the population slope is; we don't even know whether the population slope is positive or negative! The standard error is simply too large.

As we have seen, the standard error depends very much on sample size. Apart from sample size, the standard error for a slope also depends on the variance of the independent variable, the variance of the dependent variable, and the correlations between the independent variable and other independent variables in the equation (in case of multiple regression). We will not bore you with the complicated formula for the standard error for regression coefficients<sup>1</sup>. Instead, we look at the standard error that SPSS or other computer packages compute for us.

### 4.3 *t*-distributions

Above we saw that if there is a large collection of data points (population) with a particular slope that describes the relationship between two variables, and if you then take random samples out of this collection, each time you find a different value for the slope in the sample, the sample slope. We saw that the standard deviation of the distribution of all such slopes is called the standard error. The standard error gives us information about how certain we can be that a slope in the sample is close to the slope in the population. The smaller the standard error the more certain that the population slope has a value that is in the neighborhood of the value for the sample slope.

When we look at the distribution of the sample slope, for instance in Figure 4.4, we notice that the distribution looks very much like a normal distribution. Well, actually it isn't quite a normal distribution. In reality it has the shape of a *t*-distribution. Figure 4.6 shows the difference between a *t*-distribution (in red) and a normal distribution (in blue). In this figure, the means are equal (0) and the areas under the curve are equal (1), but the shapes are clearly different. Compared to the *t*-distribution, the normal distribution has more observed values close to the mean (the distribution is more peaked). The *t*-distribution has relatively more observations in the tails of the distribution (heavy tails).

Actually, the shape of the distribution of sample slopes depends on the size of the samples. In Figure 4.7 we see what the distribution would look like if all samples would be of size 4 (the red line) and what the distribution would look like if the samples would be of size 200 (the blue line). Remember: we are talking here only about the *shape* of the distribution. If sample size is large, like for instance 200 (the blue line), the shape looks extremely close to the normal distribution.

---

<sup>1</sup>See <https://www3.nd.edu/~rwilliam/stats1/x91.pdf> for the formula. In this pdf, 'IV' means independent variable

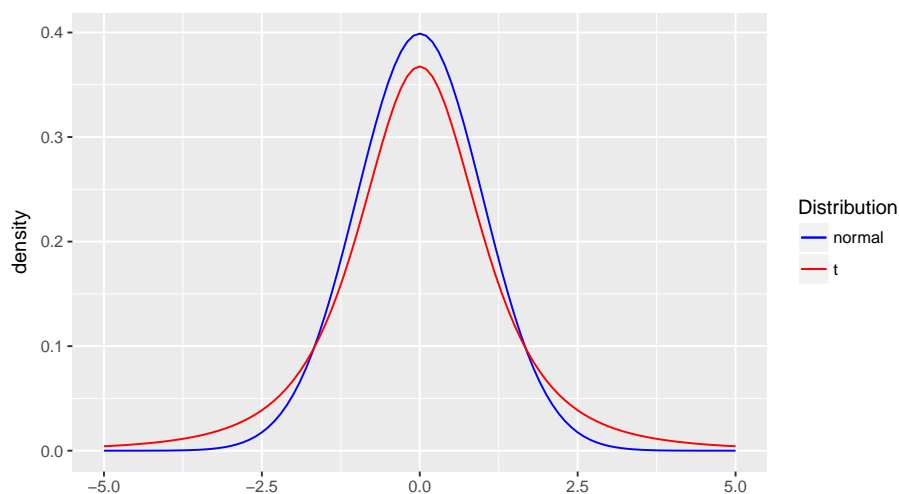


Figure 4.6: Difference in the shapes of a normal distribution and a  $t$ -distribution

In summary, when we draw many samples from a population, the shape of the distribution of sample slopes is that of a  $t$ -distribution. The shape of the  $t$ -distribution depends on sample size. The larger the sample size, the more the shape of the  $t$ -distribution looks like a normal distribution.

## 4.4 $T$ -statistics

Above we saw that sample slopes have a  $t$ -distribution, and that if sample size is large, say larger than 200, the  $t$ -distribution looks very much like a normal distribution. From the normal distribution, we know that if we standardize the scores by computing  $z$ -scores, that is, if we subtract the mean and then divide by the standard deviation,  $z = \frac{x - \bar{x}}{\sigma}$ , then 2.5% of the  $z$ -values is smaller than -1.96 and 2.5% of the  $z$ -values is larger than +1.96.

Therefore, if for large sample size the  $t$ -distribution is practically indistinguishable from the normal distribution, we know that if we standardize the sample slope values, we get a similar result. Instead of looking at the raw slope value, we can compute a standardized slope, let's call that standardized result  $t$ . Then we get:

$$t = \frac{b - \beta}{se} \quad (4.1)$$

In words: we take a particular sample slope  $b$  and we subtract the population slope  $\beta$ . The result we divide by the standard deviation of the sample slopes, which is called the standard error  $se$ .

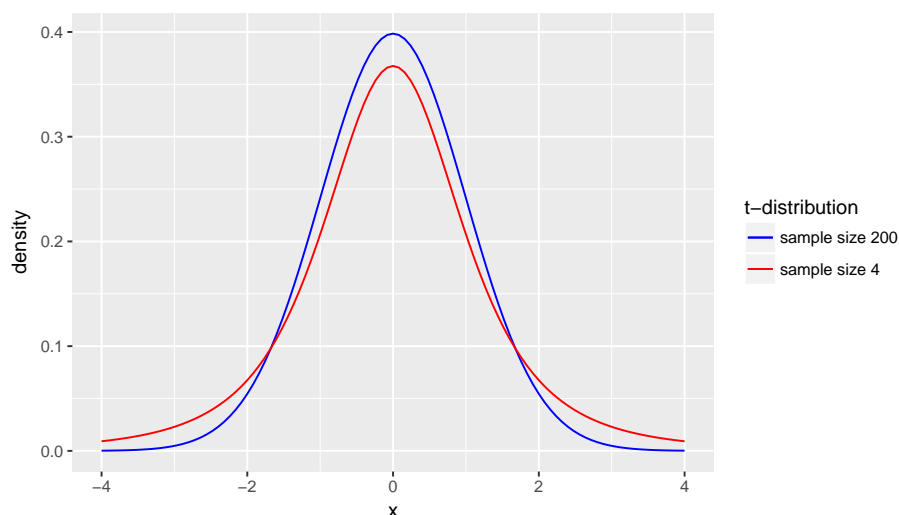


Figure 4.7: The shape of the distribution of sample slopes depends on sample size.

Let's go back to the example of the beer bottles. In our first random sample of 200 bottles, we found a sample slope of -0.0879535. We also happened to know the population slope, which was 0.0012583. From our computer experiment, we saw that the standard deviation of the sample slopes with sample size 200 was equal to 0.0840496. Thus, if we fill in the formula for the standardized slope  $t$ , we get for this particular sample

$$T = \frac{-0.0879535 - 0.0012583}{0.0840496} = -1.0614181 \quad (4.2)$$

Notice that we distinguish between a variable  $t$  that has a  $t$ -distribution, and a  $T$ -statistic that is based on a computation.

Now, what can we say about this  $T$ -value? Since with a sample size of 200 the distribution closely resembles a normal distribution, we can use normal tables published online or in computer packages to see how likely a value of  $T = -1.0614181$  actually is. In normal tables we find that a  $Z$ -value of  $-1.0614181$  is not that strange: in the standard normal distribution, 14.4249958% of the values is smaller than  $-1.0614181$ . The area is shown in Figure 4.8.

When would we say that a certain  $T$ -value would cause concern? Well, perhaps we could say that if the  $T$ -value we would find were 3 standard deviations away from the population value, either 3 standard deviations above the population value or 3 standard deviations below the population value. From the normal tables, we know that that happens in only 0.2699796% of the time.

Alternatively, we could say that we would perhaps also be worried if the sample slope were 2 standard deviations away from the population slope, corresponding to  $T$ -value of 2 or -2. We know that the probability that that happens



is 0, as she doesn't believe there is a linear relationship between temperature and volume. She feels that the fact that we found a sample slope that was not 0 was a pure coincidence. Based on that hypothesis, we compute  $T$  again and find:

$$T = \frac{-0.0879535 - 0}{0.0840496} = -1.0464475 \quad (4.4)$$

In other words, if we believe Martha, our sample slope is only about 1 standard deviation away from her hypothesized value. That's not a very bad idea, since from the normal distribution we know that a value more than 1.05 standard deviations away from the mean (above or below) is 29.54%. In other words, if the population is truly 0, then our sample slope of  $-0.0879535$  is quite a reasonable finding. If we reverse this line of reasoning: if our sample slope is  $-0.0879535$ , with a standard error of  $0.0840496$ , then a population slope of 0 is quite a reasonable guess! It is reasonable, since the difference between the sample slope and the hypothesised value is only  $-1.0464475$  standard errors.

So when do we no longer feel that a value for the population slope is reasonable? Perhaps if the probability of finding a sample slope of a certain size given a certain population slope is so small that we no longer believe that the hypothesised value is reasonable. We might for example choose a small probability like 1%. We know from the normal distribution that 1% of the values lie at least  $-2.5758293$  standard deviations above and below the mean. So if our sample slope is more than  $-2.5758293$  standard errors away from the hypothesised population slope, then that population slope is *not* a reasonable guess. In other words, if the *distance* between the sample slope and the hypothesised population slope is more than 2.32 standard errors, then the hypothesised population slope is no longer reasonable.

This implies that any value within the range of  $-2.5758293$  standard errors around the sample slope is a collection of reasonable values for the population slope.

Thus, in our example of the 200 bottles, a sample slope of  $-0.0879535$  and a standard error of  $0.0840496$ , the interval from  $-0.2829485$  to  $0.1070416$  contains reasonable values for the population mean. If we would have to guess the value for the population slope, our guess would be that it would lie somewhere between  $-0.2829485$  and  $0.1070416$ , *if we feel that 1% is a small enough probability*.

In data analysis, such an interval that contains reasonable values for the population value, if we only know the sample value, is called a *confidence interval*. Here we've chosen to use  $-2.5758293$  standard deviations as our cut-off point, because we felt that 1% would be a small enough probability to dismiss a population value as a reasonable candidate. Such a confidence interval based on this 1% cut-off point is called a 99% confidence interval.

One often also sees 95% confidence intervals, particularly in social and behavioural sciences. Because with the normal distribution, 5% of the observations lie more than 1.96 standard deviations away from the mean, the 95% confidence interval is constructed by subtracting/adding 1.96 standard errors

from/to the sample value. Thus, in the case of our bottle sample, the 95% confidence interval for the population slope is from  $-0.0879535 - 1.96 * 0.0840496$  to  $-0.0879535 + 1.96 * 0.0840496$ , so reasonable values for the population slope are those values between  $-0.2526907$  and  $0.0767837$ . Luckily, this corresponds to the truth, because we happen to know that the population slope is equal to  $0.0012583$ . In real life we don't know the population slope and of course it might happen that the true population value is not within the 95% confidence interval. If you want to make the probability of this being the case smaller, then you can use a 99% or even a 99.9% or larger interval.

## 4.6 Confidence intervals for smaller sample sizes

In the previous section we used the normal distribution to come up with 95% and 99% confidence intervals for the slope coefficient. These were constructed using 1.96 and  $-2.5758293$  times the standard error, respectively. However, these numbers 1.96 and  $-2.5758293$  can only be used when the sample size is large enough to say that the distribution of the sample slope is very close to a normal distribution. Earlier, we saw that the distribution of the sample slope is actually a  $t$ -distribution, that doesn't look normal at all for small sample sizes.

So for small sample sizes, we need to know the cut-off points that correspond to 5% and 1% probabilities for the  $t$ -distribution.

For large sample sizes we can approximate the  $t$ -distribution by a normal distribution so that we know that 95% of the observations lie between  $-1.96$  and  $+1.96$  times the standard deviation. For small sample sizes we have to use a  $t$ -distribution to construct confidence intervals. For small sample sizes, we need to know the particular shape of the distribution to find out where the middle 95% of the sample means lie.

Figure 4.9 shows the case for the situation where the population slope is 0 and the sample size is 4. Suppose the standard error is equal to 1. Then this figure shows that roughly 95% of the sample slopes lie between  $\pm 3.18$  standard errors below and above the mean. In the same figure we also see that if sample size is 200, 95% of the sample means lie between  $\pm 1.97$  standard errors below and above the mean. This is almost the same as for the normal distribution, where 95% of the observations lie between  $\pm 1.96$  standard deviations below and above the mean.

Because for every sample size, the middle region where 95% of the observations lie is different, there are tables available where these values can be found. However, these tables are built-in in every statistical package, so it is far easier to let SPSS construct the 95% confidence intervals for us.

But let us look at a few regularities. For several probabilities, the corresponding quantiles are presented in Table ?? for the standard normal distribution and several  $t$ -distributions.

The shape of the  $t$ -distribution is indicated by its *degrees of freedom*. The shape of the distribution of sample slopes when sample size is 200, is a  $t$ -distribution with 198 degrees of freedom. The shape of the distribution of



Table 4.1: Quantiles for the normal and several  $t$ -distributions.

| probs  | norm  | t198  | t100  | t50   | t10   | t2     |
|--------|-------|-------|-------|-------|-------|--------|
| 0.0005 | -3.29 | -3.34 | -3.39 | -3.50 | -4.59 | -31.60 |
| 0.0010 | -3.09 | -3.13 | -3.17 | -3.26 | -4.14 | -22.33 |
| 0.0050 | -2.58 | -2.60 | -2.63 | -2.68 | -3.17 | -9.92  |
| 0.0100 | -2.33 | -2.35 | -2.36 | -2.40 | -2.76 | -6.96  |
| 0.0250 | -1.96 | -1.97 | -1.98 | -2.01 | -2.23 | -4.30  |
| 0.0500 | -1.64 | -1.65 | -1.66 | -1.68 | -1.81 | -2.92  |
| 0.1000 | -1.28 | -1.29 | -1.29 | -1.30 | -1.37 | -1.89  |
| 0.9000 | 1.28  | 1.29  | 1.29  | 1.30  | 1.37  | 1.89   |
| 0.9500 | 1.64  | 1.65  | 1.66  | 1.68  | 1.81  | 2.92   |
| 0.9750 | 1.96  | 1.97  | 1.98  | 2.01  | 2.23  | 4.30   |
| 0.9900 | 2.33  | 2.35  | 2.36  | 2.40  | 2.76  | 6.96   |
| 0.9950 | 2.58  | 2.60  | 2.63  | 2.68  | 3.17  | 9.92   |
| 0.9990 | 3.09  | 3.13  | 3.17  | 3.26  | 4.14  | 22.33  |
| 0.9995 | 3.29  | 3.34  | 3.39  | 3.50  | 4.59  | 31.60  |

sample slopes when sample size is 4, is a  $t$ -distribution with 2 degrees of freedom. In general, the shape of the distribution of sample slopes for sample size  $n$ , is a  $t$ -distribution with  $n - 2$  degrees of freedom. The higher the degrees of freedom, the more the corresponding  $t$ -distribution looks like a normal distribution. We will come back to degrees of freedom and the  $n - 2$  rule in the next section.

Table ?? shows for instance the cutoff points for 2.5% and 97.5% for the normal distribution and the  $t$ -distribution with 198 degrees of freedom: 1.96 and 1.97 standard deviations (standard errors) respectively. For the  $t$ -distribution with 100 degrees of freedom, the cutoff point is 1.98 standard errors. This would be the appropriate  $t$ -distribution for a sample size of 102. But for smaller sample sizes, the increase in number of standard errors goes up quickly: with 50 degrees of freedom (sample size 52), the cutoff is 2.01, for 10 degrees of freedom it is 2.23 and for 2 degrees of freedom it becomes even 4.30 standard errors. Thus, if we have a sample size of 4, we construct a 95% confidence interval of 4.30 standard errors below the sample slope and 4.30 standard errors above the sample slope.

If you want to have the 99% confidence interval, you look at the cutoff points for 0.005 and 0.995 which are -2.58 and +2.58, respectively, for the normal distribution, but -9.92 and +9.92 for a  $t$ -distribution with 2 degrees of freedom. Suppose we sample 4 bottles and find a sample slope of 5 with a standard error of 4, then the 99% confidence for the slope is from  $5 - 9.92 \times 4$  to  $5 + 9.92 \times 4$ , so from -34.68 to 44.68, which is of course a huge interval. On the other hand, a sample of only 4 bottles is of course very small.

In short, we can look up the cutoff points for 95%, 99% and other intervals from tables online, in books, or in statistical packages. Generally, the smaller the sample size, the lower the degrees of freedom, the larger the number of standard errors you need to construct your confidence intervals.

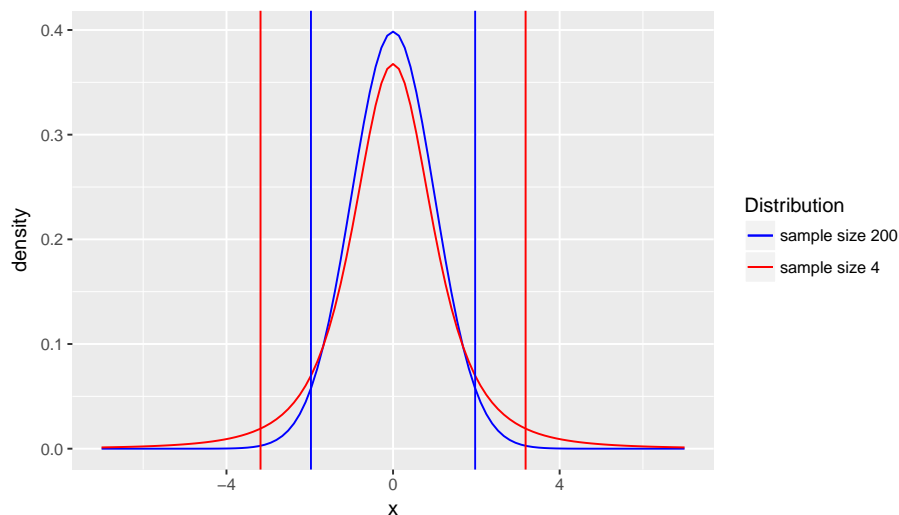


Figure 4.9: Two t-distributions when sample size is 4 or 200, with corresponding 95 percent intervals.

#### 4.6.1 Exercises

1. Suppose we randomly pick 102 students from the University of Twente and determine the linear equation between age (independent variable) and height (dependent variable). Suppose we find a slope coefficient of 0.010, with a standard error of 0.009. Construct the 95% confidence interval for the slope in the entire population in UT students using table ??.
2. What can we say about values within this constructed confidence interval?
3. Suppose a professor believes the true slope is equal to 0: is that a reasonable belief given the finding of a slope of 0.010? Motivate your answer using the 95% confidence interval.

Answers:

1. Sample size is 102, so degrees of freedom for the sample slope is 100. The 95% cutoff values for the  $t$ -distribution with 100 degrees of freedom are -1.98 and 1.98. Therefore the 95% interval ranges from  $0.010 - 1.98 \times 0.009$  to  $0.010 + 1.98 \times 0.009$ , so from -0.008 to 0.028.
2. These values are reasonable values for the population slope.
3. Yes, the value of 0 lies within the range from -0.008 to 0.028, so 0 is a reasonable value for the population slope.

## 4.7 Degrees of freedom

What does the term, "degrees of freedom" mean? It refers to the number of independent pieces of information in a sample of data.

Suppose that we have a sample with four values 4, 2, 6, 8. There are four separate pieces of information here. There is no particular connection between these values. They are free to take any values, in principle. We could say that there are four degrees of freedom associated with this sample of data.

Now, suppose that I tell you that three of the values in the sample are 4, 2, and 6; and I also tell you that the sample average is 5. You can immediately deduce that the fourth value has to be 8. There is no other logical possibility.

So, once I tell you that the sample average is 5, I am effectively introducing a *constraint*. The value of the unknown fourth sample value is implicitly being determined from the other three values, and the constraint. That is, once the constraint is introduced, there are only three logically independent pieces of information in the sample. That is to say, there are only three "degrees of freedom", once the sample average is revealed.

Now let's carry this example to regression analysis. Suppose I have four observations of variables  $x$  and  $y$ . Each value of  $y$  is one piece of information. These values could be anything, so we say that we have 4 degrees of freedom. Now suppose I use a linear equation for these data points, and suppose I only use an intercept. Let the intercept be 5. Now the first bit of information,  $x$  and  $y$  could be anything, say 1 and 2 respectively. The second and third bits of information could also be anything, say 2 and 6, and 4 and 2. Figure 4.10 shows these bits of information as dots in a scatterplot. Since we know that the intercept is equal to 5, with no slope (slope=0), we can also draw the regression line.

If we compute the residuals, we have residuals -3, 1 and -3 for these data points. When we sum them we get -3. Since we know that all residuals should sum to 0 in a regression analysis, we can derive the fourth residual to be +3, since only then the residuals sum to 0. Therefore, the  $y$ -value for the fourth data point (for  $x = 3$ , for example) has to be 8, since then the residual is equal to  $8 - 5 = 3$ .

In short, when we do a regression analysis with only an intercept, the degrees of freedom is equal to the number of data points (combinations of  $x$  and  $y$ ) minus 1, or in short notation:  $n - 1$ .

Now let's look at the situation where we do a regression analysis with both an intercept and a slope: suppose the intercept is equal to 3 and the slope is equal to 1:  $y = 3 + 1x$ . Then suppose we have the same  $x$ -values as the example above: 1, 2 and 4. When we give these  $x$ -values corresponding  $y$ -values, 2, 6, and 3, we get the plot in Figure 4.11.

The black line is the regression line that should be imposed on the data. The blue line is the regression line based on the three data points. Now the question is, is it possible for a fourth data point with  $x = 3$ , to think of a  $y$ -value such that the regression line based on these four data points is equal to  $y = 3 + 1x$ ?

Figure 4.12 shows a number of possibilities for the value of  $y$  if  $x = 3$ . It can

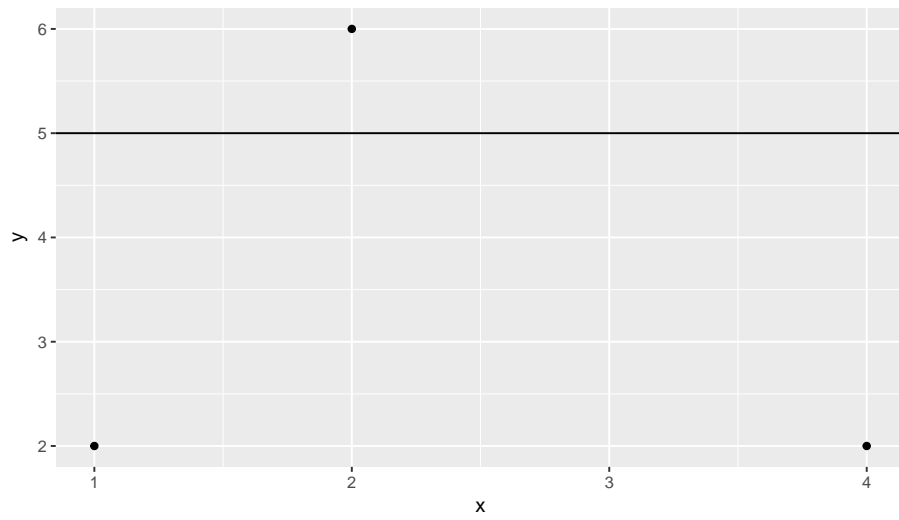


Figure 4.10: Distribution of the sample mean when sample size is 4 or 200

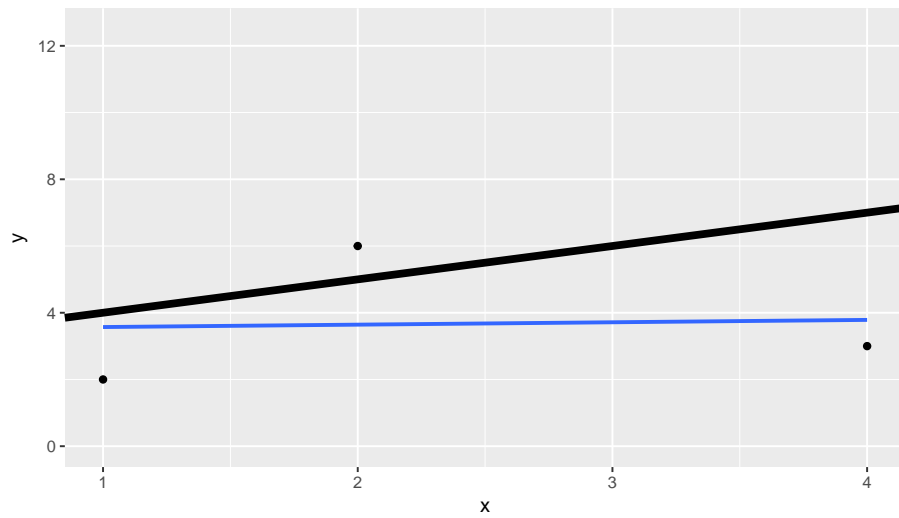


Figure 4.11: Distribution of the sample mean when sample size is 4 or 200

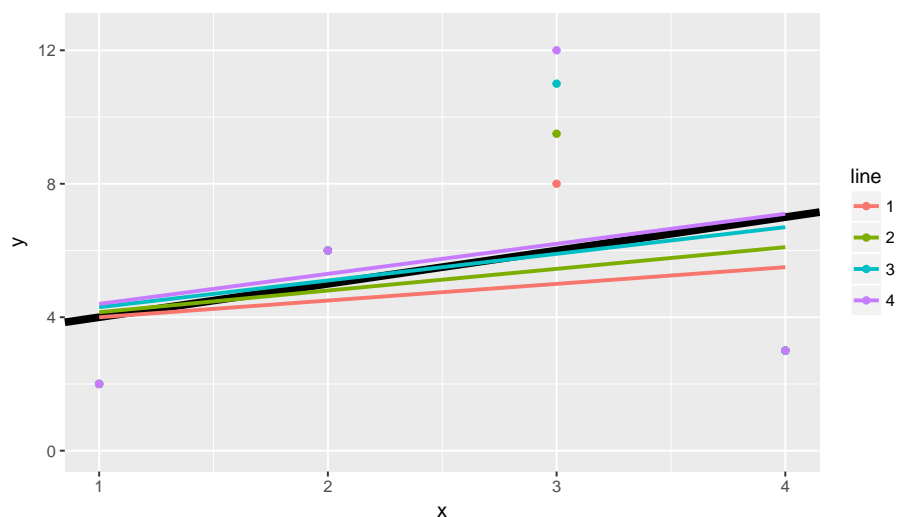


Figure 4.12: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

be seen, that it is impossible to pick a value for  $y$  such that we get a regression equation  $y = 3 + 1x$ .

So, with 4 data points, we can never freely choose 3 residuals in order to satisfy the constraint that a particular regression equation holds. It turns out, that in this case we can only choose 2 residuals freely, and the remaining residuals are already determined. To prove this requires matrix algebra, but the gist of it is that if you have a regression equation with both an intercept and a slope, the degrees of freedom is equal to the number of data points minus 2:  $n - 2$ .

In the more general case of multiple regression, with the number of independent variables equal to  $k$  and including an intercept, the degrees of freedom for the  $t$ -distribution is equal to  $n - k - 1$ . One could also say, the degrees of freedom is equal to sample size minus the number of parameters in your model.

For example, suppose you have 200 data points and 4 independent variables. Then you have 4 slope parameters and 1 intercept parameter in your model, so 5 parameters in total. The degrees of freedom is in that case  $n - 5 = 195$ .

## Chapter 5

# Inference II: hypothesis testing, $p$ -values and beyond

### 5.1 The null-hypothesis

Often data analysis is about finding an answer to the question whether there is a relationship between two variables. In most cases, the question pertains to the population: is there a relationship between variable  $y$  and variable  $x$  in the population? In many cases, one looks for a linear relationship between two variables.

One common method to answer this question is to analyse a sample of data, apply a linear model, and look at the slope. However, one then knows the slope in the sample, but not the slope in the population. We have seen that the slope in the sample can be very different from the slope in the population. Suppose we find a slope of 1: does that mean there is a slope in the population or that there is no slope in the population?

In inferential data analysis, one often works with two hypotheses: the null-hypothesis says that the population slope is equal to 0 and the alternative hypothesis says that there is a slope that is different from 0. Remember that if the slope is equal to 0, that is saying that there is no linear relationship between  $x$  and  $y$ . Therefore, the null-hypothesis states there is no linear relationship between  $x$  and  $y$  in the population. If there is a slope, whether positive or negative, is the same as saying there is a linear relationship, so the alternative hypothesis states there that is a linear relationship between  $x$  and  $y$  in the population. The null-hypothesis is often denoted as  $H_0$  and the alternative hypothesis is often denoted as  $H_1$ . In formula form, we have

$$H_0 : \beta_{slope} = 0 \tag{5.1}$$

$$H_1 : \beta_{slope} \neq 0 \tag{5.2}$$

So the population slope,  $\beta_{slope}$ , is either 0 or it is not. Our data analysis is

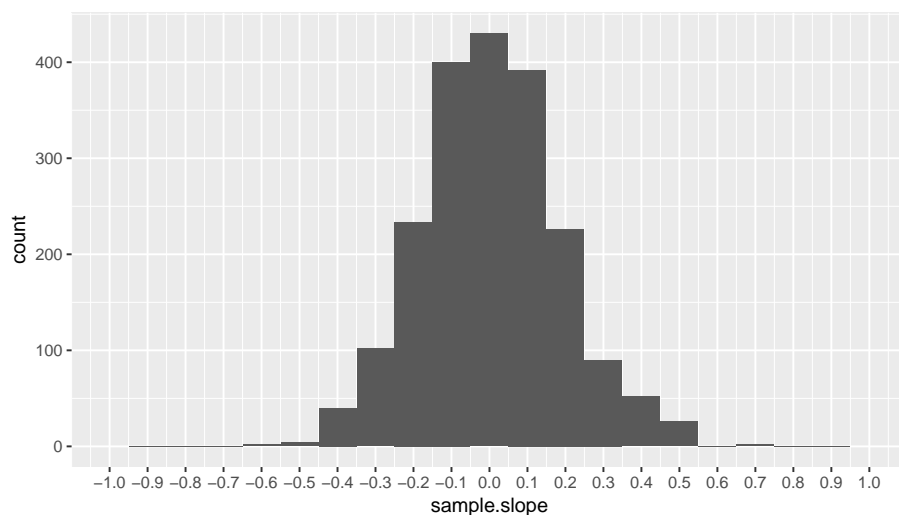


Figure 5.1: Distribution of the sample mean when population variance is 25 and sample size equals 200.

then aimed at determining which of these two hypotheses is true. Key is that we do a thought experiment on the null-hypothesis: we wonder what would happen if the the population slope would be really 0. In our imagination we draw many samples of a certain size, say 40 data points, and then determine the slope for each sample. Earlier we learned that the many sample slopes would form a histogram in the shape of a  $t$ -distribution with  $n - 2 = 38$  degrees of freedom. For example suppose we would draw 1000 samples of size 40, then the histogram of the 1000 slopes would be like depicted in Figure 5.1

From this histogram we see that all observed sample slopes are well between -0.8 and 0.8. This gives us the information we need. Of course, we have only one sample of data, and we don't know anything about the population data. But we do know that if the population slope is equal to 0, then it is very unlikely to find a sample slope of say 1 or 2, or -2 for that matter. Thus, if we happen to find a sample slope of say -2, we know that this finding is extremely unlikely *if we hold the null-hypothesis to be true*. In other words, if the population slope is equal to 0, it would be quite improbable to find a sample slope of -2. Therefore, we regard the null-hypothesis to be false, since it does not provide a good explanation of why we found a slope of -2. In that case, we say that *we reject the null-hypothesis*.

## 5.2 The $p$ -value

The  $p$ -value is a probability. It represents the probability of observing certain events, given that the null-hypothesis is true.

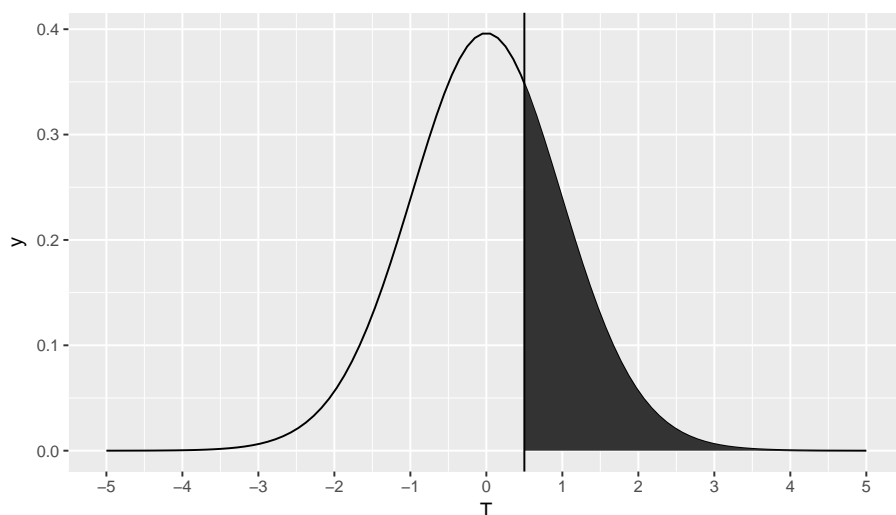


Figure 5.2: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

Earlier we obtained a sample slope of 1, and we saw that this value was 0.5 standard errors away from 0. Thus, the  $T$ -statistic was 0.5. We looked at the  $t$ -distribution with 38 degrees of freedom, and saw that such a value of 0.5 was not very strange: it lies well within the middle 95% of the  $t$ -distribution. What is often done is to compute the probability that we obtain such a value of 0.5 or larger. Figure 5.2 shows the area under the curve for values of  $T$  that are larger than 0.5.

In tables online, in books, or available in statistical packages, we can look up how large this area is. It turns out to be 0.3099792. So, if the population slope is equal to 0 and we draw an infinite number of samples of size 40 and compute the sample slopes, then 31% of them will be larger than 0.5. The proportion of the shaded area is what we call a one-sided  $p$ -value. We call it one-sided, because we only look at one side of the  $t$ -distribution: we only look at values that are larger than our value of 0.5.

Earlier we observed that a value of 0.5 is not that strange to find if the population slope is 0. On the same token, it would also have been probable to find a slope of -1, corresponding to a  $T$ -value of -0.5. Since the  $t$ -distribution is symmetrical, the probability of finding a  $T$ -value of less than -0.5 is depicted in Figure 5.3, and of course this probability is also 0.3099792.

Remember that the null-hypothesis is that the population slope is 0, and the alternative hypothesis is that the population slope is *not* 0. We should therefore conclude that if we find a very large positive *or* negative slope, large in the sense of the number of standard errors away from 0, that the null-hypothesis is unlikely to be true. Therefore, if we find a slope of 0.5 or -0.5, then we should determine the probability of finding a  $T$ -value that is larger than 0.5 or smaller



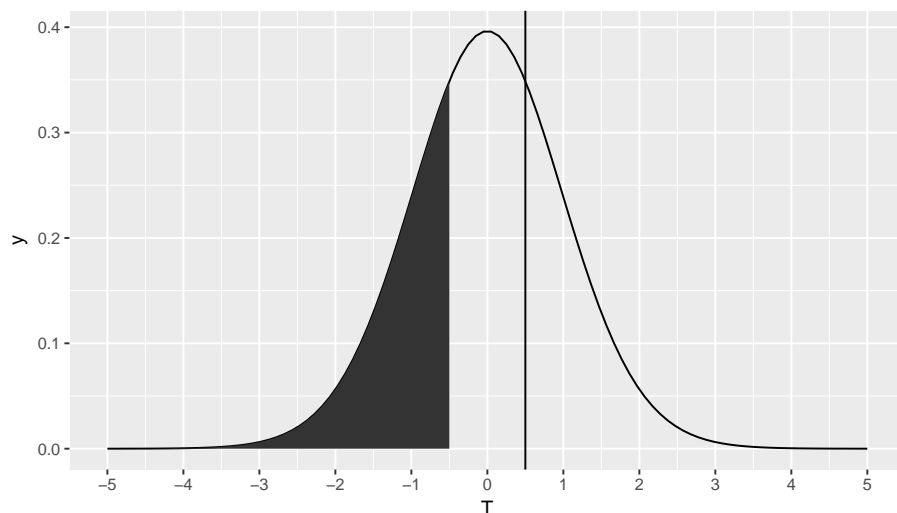


Figure 5.3: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

than 0.5. This probability is depicted in Figure 5.4 and is equal to twice the one-side  $p$ -value,  $2 \times 0.3099792 = 0.6199583$ .

This probability is called the *two-sided p-value*. This is the one that should always be used, since the alternative hypothesis is also two-sided: the population slope can be positive or negative. The question now is: is a sample slope of 1 enough evidence to reject the null-hypothesis? To determine that, we determine how many standard errors away from 0 the sample slope is and we look up in tables how often that happens. Thus in our case, we found a slope that is 0.5 standard errors away from 0 and the tables told us that the probability of finding a slope that is at least 0.5 standard deviations away from 0 (positive or negative) is equal to 0.6199583. We find this probability rather large, so we decide that we *do not reject the null-hypothesis*.

### 5.3 Hypothesis testing

When do we think the probability is small enough to conclude that the null-hypothesis can be rejected? This was a question posed to the founding father of statistical hypothesis testing, Sir Ronald Fischer. In his book *Statistical Methods for Research Workers* (1925), Fisher proposed a probability of 5%. He advocated 5% as a standard level for concluding that there is evidence against the null-hypothesis. However, he did not see it as an absolute rule: "If  $P$  is between .1 and .9 there is certainly no reason to suspect the hypothesis tested. If it is below .02 it is strongly indicated that the hypothesis fails to account for the whole of the facts. We shall not often be astray if we draw a conventional line at .05...". So Fisher saw the  $p$ -value as an informal index to be used as

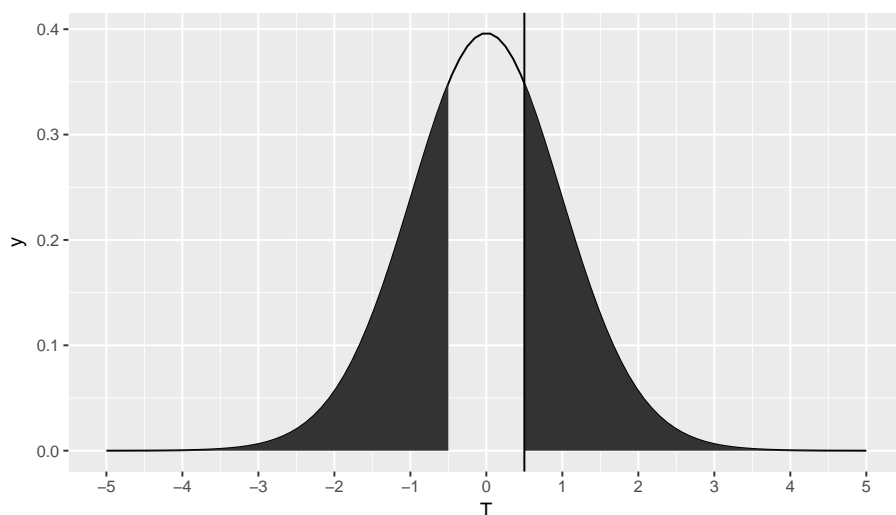


Figure 5.4: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

a measure of discrepancy between the data and the null-hypothesis: The null hypothesis is never proved or established, but is possibly disproved.

Later, Neyman and Pearson saw the  $p$ -value as an instrument in decision making: is the null-hypothesis true, or is the alternative hypothesis true? You either reject the null-hypothesis or you don't, there is nothing in between. This view to data-analysis is still rather popular in the social and behavioural sciences, but also in particle physics. In order to make such a black-and-white decision, you decide before-hand, that is, before collecting data, what *level of significance* you choose for your  $p$ -value to decide whether to reject the null-hypothesis. For example, as your significance level, you might want to choose 1%. Let's call this chosen significance level  $\alpha$ . Then you collect your data, you apply your linear model to the data, and find that the  $p$ -value associated with the slope effect equals  $p$ . If  $p$  is smaller than or equal to  $\alpha$  you *reject the null-hypothesis*, and if  $p$  is larger than  $\alpha$  then you *do not reject the null-hypothesis*. A coefficient with a  $p \leq \alpha$  is said to be a *significant* effect, and a coefficient with a  $p > \alpha$  is said to be *non-significant*. If the slope is significant, then one should reject the null-hypothesis and say there is a slope in the population different from zero. If the slope is not significant, then one should not reject the null-hypothesis and say there is no slope in the population (i.e., the slope is 0).

Since data-analysis is about probabilities, there is always a chance that you draw the wrong conclusion: you can wrongfully reject the null-hypothesis, or you can wrongfully accept the null-hypothesis. Pearson and Neyman distinguished between two kinds of error: one could reject the null-hypothesis while it is actually true (error of the first kind, or type I error) and one could accept the null-hypothesis while it is not true (error of the second kind, or type II error).

The probability of a type I error is the same as our  $\alpha$  for the significance level, and the probability of a type II error by  $\beta$ .

As an example, suppose you want to determine the slope for the effect of age on height in children. The null-hypothesis is that the effect is 0 in the population of all children. You might study a sample of children and you might find a value for the slope. You might decide that if the  $p$ -value is lower than a critical value you conclude that the null-hypothesis is not true. Suppose you think a probability of 1% is enough to reject the null-hypothesis as true. In other words, if  $p \leq 0.01$  then we no longer think 0 is a reasonable value for the population slope. In this case, we have determined our  $\alpha$  or type I error rate to be  $\alpha = 0.01$ . This means that if we study a random sample of children, we look at the slope and find a  $p$ -value of 0.011, then we do not reject the null-hypothesis, but if we find a  $p$ -value of 0.010, we reject the null-hypothesis.

Setting the  $\beta$  value is bit trickier. It is not possible to compute the probability that we find a non-significant effect ( $p < \alpha$ ), given that the alternative hypothesis is true, because the alternative hypothesis is only saying that the slope is not equal to 0. In order to compute  $\beta$ , we need to think first of a reasonable size of the slope that we expect. For example, suppose we believe that a slope of 1 is quite reasonable, given what we know about growth in children. Let that be our alternative hypothesis. Next, we determine the distribution of sample slopes under the assumption that the population slope is 1. We know that this distribution has a mean of 1 and a standard deviation equal to the standard error. We also know it has the shape of a  $t$ -distribution. Let sample size be equal to 102 and the standard error 1. If we standardize the slopes by dividing by the standard error, we get the two  $t$ -distributions in Figure 5.5: one distribution of  $T$ -values if the population slope is 0, and one distribution of  $T$ -values if the population slope is 1. The black areas represent the area where  $p < \alpha$ : for all values of  $T$  smaller than  $-2.4285676$  and larger than  $2.4285676$ , we reject the null-hypothesis. The probability that this happens, *if the null-hypothesis is true*, is equal to  $\alpha$  which is 0.01 in this example. The probability that this happens *if the alternative hypothesis is true* (here, population slope is 1), is depicted in Figure 5.6.

The area that is black in Figure 5.6 turns out to be 0.0906151. This represents the probability that we find a significant effect, *if the population slope is 1*. This is actually the *complement* of the probability to find a non-significant effect, *if the population slope is 1*, which is  $\beta$  or the probability of a type II error. Therefore, Figure 5.6 represents  $1 - \beta$ : the probability of finding a significant  $p$ -value, if indeed the null-hypothesis is not true. In this example,  $1 - \beta$  is equal to 0.0906151, so  $\beta$  is equal to its complement,  $1 - 0.0906151 = 0.9093849$ .

In its turn, the  $p$ -value, as we have seen, depends on the  $T$ -statistic and the degrees of freedom. The degrees of freedom in turn depends on sample size. The  $T$ -statistic also depends on sample size, as it is partly based on the standard error.

If the alternative hypothesis is true, that is, if the population slope is not 0, then the probability of getting a  $p$ -value larger than 0.1, is equal to  $\beta$ . This is because by definition  $\beta$  is the probability of a type II error: the error that we *do*

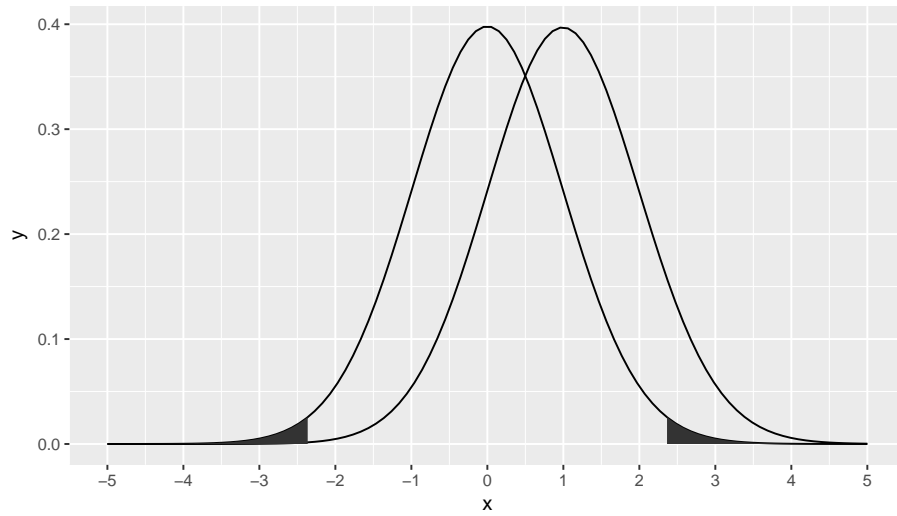


Figure 5.5: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

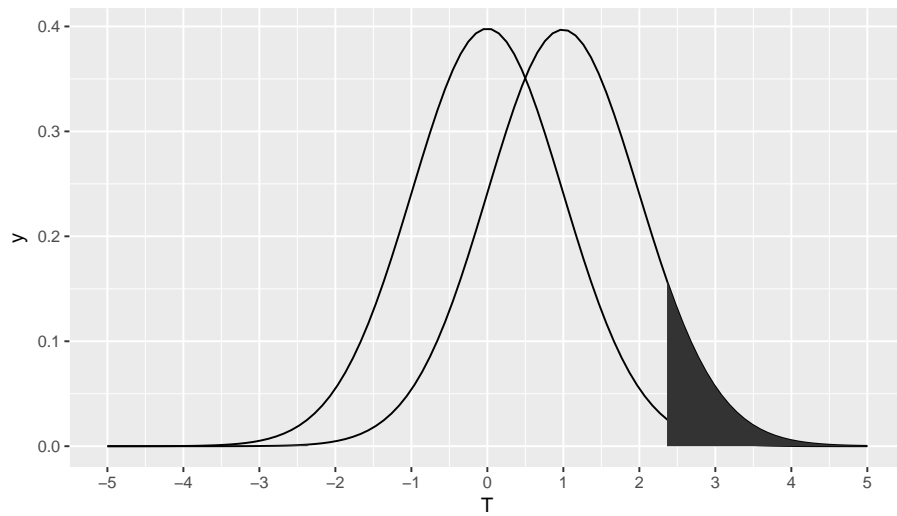


Figure 5.6: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

*not reject the null-hypothesis, while the null-hypothesis is not true.* For example, suppose the population slope is 0.01. In a sample we find a slope of 1, with a  $T$ -statistic of 2.50 with 45 degrees of freedom. The associated  $p$ -value is equal to 0.016. If  $\alpha = 0.01$  then we conclude that this slope of 1 is not significantly different from zero. However, since the population is actually different from 0, namely 0.01, we draw the wrong conclusion. The conditional probability<sup>1</sup> that we find a non-significant slope (we reject the null-hypothesis), given that the population slope differs from 0 (the null-hypothesis is not true) is equal to  $\beta$ .

Of course we'd like to have a small  $\beta$ : we don't like making mistakes. So if indeed the null-hypothesis is false, we want the probability that we reject the null-hypothesis as large as possible. In order to achieve that, we need to have a  $T$ -value as large as possible. Since  $T = b/se$ , this can be achieved by having a standard error as small as possible, and this happens when our sample size is as large as possible.

In later editions, Fisher explicitly contrasted the use of the  $p$ -value for statistical inference in science with the NeymanPearson method, which he terms "Acceptance Procedures".[19] Fisher emphasizes that while fixed levels such as 5%, 2%, and 1% are convenient, the exact  $p$ -value can be used, and the strength of evidence can and will be revised with further experimentation. In contrast, decision procedures require a clear-cut decision, yielding an irreversible action, and the procedure is based on costs of error, which, he argues, are inapplicable to scientific research.

There is widespread agreement that  $p$ -values are often misused and misinterpreted.[21][22][23] One practice that has been particularly criticized is accepting the alternative hypothesis for any  $p$ -value nominally less than .05 without other supporting evidence. Although  $p$ -values are helpful in assessing how incompatible the data are with a specified statistical model, contextual factors must also be considered, such as "the design of a study, the quality of the measurements, the external evidence for the phenomenon under study, and the validity of assumptions that underlie the data analysis".[23] Another concern is that the  $p$ -value is often misunderstood as being the probability that the null hypothesis is true.[23][24] Some statisticians have proposed replacing  $p$ -values with alternative measures of evidence,[23] such as confidence intervals,[25][26] likelihood ratios,[27][28] or Bayes factors,[29][30][31] but there is heated debate on the feasibility of these alternatives.[32][33] Others have suggested to remove fixed significance thresholds and to interpret  $p$ -values as continuous indices of the strength of evidence against the null hypothesis.[34][35]

In 2016, the American Statistical Association published a statement on  $p$ -

---

<sup>1</sup> $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  and the  $p$ -value are conditional probabilities. For the distinction between a probability and a conditional probability, see . . . . In short, suppose that in the whole world, 51% of the people are at most 17 years old. However, suppose that in the Netherlands that proportion is only 20%. Then if we pick a random person, the probability that that person is at most 17 years old is 0.51. However, if we happen to know that the person was picked from the Dutch population, then we know better: we know that the probability has decreased to 20%. Thus the conditional probability that a person is under age, given that the person is Dutch, equals 0.20. The conditional probability that a person is under age, given that the person is *not* Dutch, equals more than 0.51.

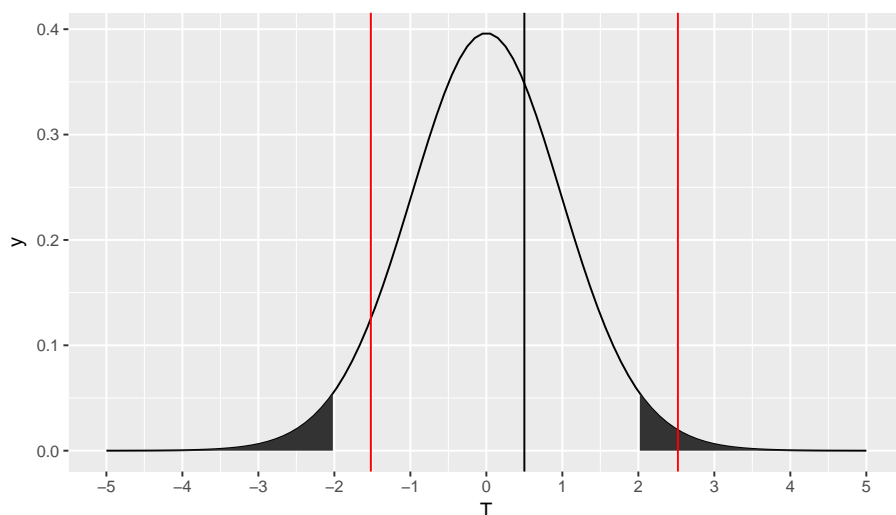


Figure 5.7: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

values, saying that "the widespread use of 'statistical significance' (generally interpreted as ' $p \leq 0.05$ ') as a license for making a claim of a scientific finding (or implied truth) leads to considerable distortion of the scientific process".

## 5.4 Relationship between $p$ -value and confidence intervals

We could have also come to the same conclusion using the 95% confidence interval. If we find a sample slope of 1, and we know that the standard error is equal to 2, then we can find the 95% confidence interval for the  $T$ -statistic (0.5) if we use a  $t$ -distribution with 38 degrees of freedom. From tables we can deduce that with a  $t$ -distribution of 38 degrees of freedom, 2.5% of the area is left of -2.0243942 and 2.5% of the area is right of 2.0243942. This way we know that the confidence interval for the  $T$ -value is from  $1 - 2.0243942 \times 2$  to  $1 + 2.0243942 \times 2$ , so from -3.0487883 to 3.0487883.

We see that the value 0 is within this range, so 0 is a reasonable value for the population slope. From this we know that the  $p$ -value for the null-hypothesis is less than 5%.

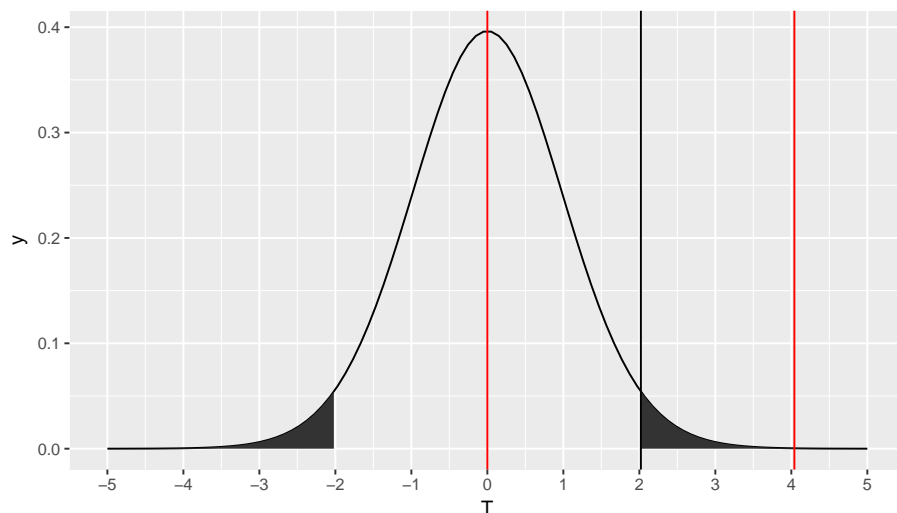


Figure 5.8: Different regression lines for different values of  $y$  if  $x=3$ .

## 5.5 Criticism on null-hypothesis testing and $p$ -values

### 5.6 Inference: from sample to population

Remember, we're usually not interested in whether there is a linear relationship between  $x$  and  $y$  in a sample. The probability that the sample slope will be exactly 0 is practically zero, so the answer will be usually no. We're usually interested in the population: is there a linear relationship between  $x$  and  $y$  in the population?

But when we think about it, it is often ridiculous to think that the population slope will be 0 exactly! Why not 0.00000111 or -0.000000008827100? Why is a slope of exactly 0 very improbable for a sample size of 200 bottles, but less improbable in the population of 80,000 bottles? Perhaps a more interesting question is how large is the population slope?

So, instead of asking research questions like Is there a linear relationship between  $x$  and  $y$ ? you might ask: How large is the linear effect of  $x$  on  $y$ ? Instead of a question like Is there an effect of the intervention? it might be more interesting to ask: How large is the effect of the intervention?

## Chapter 6

# Categorical predictor variables

### 6.1 Dummy coding

### 6.2 Predicting group means

### 6.3 Dummy coding for more than two groups

### 6.4 Comparing more than two groups

In previous sections we used dummy coding for categorical variables with two levels. Now we look into the situation where you have a categorical variable that has more than 2 levels. Take for instance the variable Country, where in your data set, there are three different values for this variable, for instance, Norway, Sweden and Finland, or perhaps Zimbabwe, Congo and South-Africa. Let's call these countries A, B and C. Here's a data example:

| ID  | Country | height |
|-----|---------|--------|
| 001 | A       | 120    |
| 002 | A       | 160    |
| 003 | B       | 121    |
| 004 | B       | 125    |
| 005 | C       | 140    |
| ... | ...     | ...    |

In general, when we have 3 different values for a categorical variable, we can code this into two dummy variables in the following way.

Let's take country C as our reference category: that means we want to know whether observations from countries A and B differ from observations from country C. So we code one new dummy variable with 1s for country A and 0s



for the other countries. We code a second new dummy variable with 1s for country B and 0s for the other countries. So we get the new data file:

| ID  | Country | height | CountryA | CountryB |
|-----|---------|--------|----------|----------|
| 001 | A       | 120    | 1        | 0        |
| 002 | A       | 160    | 1        | 0        |
| 003 | B       | 121    | 0        | 1        |
| 004 | B       | 125    | 0        | 1        |
| 005 | C       | 140    | 0        | 0        |
| ... | ...     | ...    | ...      | ...      |

Note that a third dummy variable CountryC is not necessary. Remember that with two categories, you only need one dummy variable, where one level gets 1s and another category gets 0s. In this way both categories are uniquely identified. Here with three categories we also have unique codes for every category: 1 and 0 for country A, 0 and 1 for country B, and 0 and 0 for country C. Similarly, if you have 4 categories, you can code this with 3 dummy variables. In general, when you have a variable with  $K$  categories, you can code them with  $K - 1$  dummy variables.

### 6.4.1 Analyzing categorical predictor variables

Suppose we have data on height based on a sample of thirty people ( $N = 30$ ) that come from three different countries. We want to know whether the average height is different for each country, or whether the average height is the same (null-hypothesis). We want to analyze this with a linear model in SPSS. Now there are two ways of doing this. First option is that you can use dummy coding first, and then treat these dummy variables in a quantitative way. The second option is that you let SPSS do the dummy coding for you, by indicating that you want to treat the original variable as qualitative. Let's start with the first option and then discuss the second option. Afterwards we will compare these two options.

#### Treating dummy variables quantitatively

First we create two new dummy variables, and then perform a linear model analysis using these. Note that we actually perform a multiple regression with two dummy variables.

```
RECODE Country ('A'=1) ('B'=0) ('C'=0) INTO CountryA.
RECODE Country ('A'=0) ('B'=1) ('C'=0) INTO CountryB.
EXECUTE.
UNIANOVA height WITH CountryA CountryB
/ design = CountryA CountryB
/ print = parameter.
```

In the Parameter Estimates table, we see the effects of the two dummy variables. All observations with a 1 for variable CountryA get an extra pre-

## → Univariate Analysis of Variance

Tests of Between-Subjects Effects

Dependent Variable: height

| Source          | Type III Sum of Squares | df | Mean Square | F        | Sig. |
|-----------------|-------------------------|----|-------------|----------|------|
| Corrected Model | 880.067 <sup>a</sup>    | 2  | 440.033     | 9.763    | .001 |
| Intercept       | 297217.600              | 1  | 297217.600  | 6594.523 | .000 |
| CountryA        | 28.800                  | 1  | 28.800      | .639     | .431 |
| CountryB        | 510.050                 | 1  | 510.050     | 11.317   | .002 |
| Error           | 1216.900                | 27 | 45.070      |          |      |
| Total           | 920497.000              | 30 |             |          |      |
| Corrected Total | 2096.967                | 29 |             |          |      |

a. R Squared = .420 (Adjusted R Squared = .377)

Parameter Estimates

Dependent Variable: height

| Parameter | B       | Std. Error | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-----------|---------|------------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|           |         |            |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept | 172.400 | 2.123      | 81.207 | .000 | 168.044                 | 176.756     |
| CountryA  | -2.400  | 3.002      | -.799  | .431 | -8.560                  | 3.760       |
| CountryB  | 10.100  | 3.002      | 3.364  | .002 | 3.940                   | 16.260      |

dicted height of -2.4, and all observations with a 1 for variable CountryB get an extra predicted height of 10.1. So the expected height in country A equals  $172.4 - 2.4 = 170.0$ , and the expected height in country B equals  $172.4 + 10.1 = 182.5$ . Observations in country C have a 0 for both variables CountryA and CountryB, so the expected height in country C equals the intercept 172.4.

In the Tests of between-subjects Effects table, we see other stuff going on. This is not regression output, but output based on a so-called Analysis Of Variance, or ANOVA for short. First note that the significance levels for the two effects are exactly the same as those from the regression table. Second, note that the reported values of  $F$  are the square of the  $t$  values in the regression table:  $-.799^2 = .639$  and  $3.364^2 = 11.317$ .

ANOVA is a particular case of a linear model. The  $F$ -statistic is constructed on the basis of Sums of Squares. For instance, take a look at the row for the effect of CountryA. The sum of squares is equal to 28.80. If you divide this by the degrees of freedom for this effect, you get the Mean Square:  $28.80/1 = 28.80$ . Now look at the row for Error. The sum of squares equals 1216.90. Divided by the corresponding degrees of freedom you get the Mean Square:  $1216.90/27 = 45.07$ . You obtain the  $F$ -statistic by dividing the CountryA Mean Square by the Error Mean Square:  $F = 28.80/45.07 = 0.639$ . It is not a coincidence that this  $F$ -value is exactly equal to the square of the corresponding  $t$ -value:  $F = t^2$ . Remember that the  $t$ -value is equal to the  $B$  parameter divided by the standard error:  $t = -2.400/3.002 = -.799 = \sqrt{0.639}$ . To obtain the regression coefficient we minimize the sums of squares of the residuals. So both the  $F$ -statistic and

the  $t$ -statistic come from computing sums of squares and are thus based on the same general logic of the linear model.

Since ANOVA is a special case of the linear model, we believe that it is not necessary to understand ANOVA fully: if you understand the linear model, that is good enough. Just remember that sometimes you see ANOVAs reported in the literature. Be aware that what they are actually doing is running a linear model.

### Treating the original variable qualitatively

In the alternative approach, we let SPSS do the dummy variable coding automatically. In that case we use the original variable Country with its three categories directly, and change the WITH into BY in the following way:

```
UNIANOVA height BY Country
/ design = Country
/ print = parameter.
```

All variables named after BY are treated as categorical variables and automatically coded into dummy variables. The output then looks like the following:

| Tests of Between-Subjects Effects |                         |    |             |           |      |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------|----|-------------|-----------|------|
| Dependent Variable: height        |                         |    |             |           |      |
| Source                            | Type III Sum of Squares | df | Mean Square | F         | Sig. |
| Corrected Model                   | 880.067 <sup>a</sup>    | 2  | 440.033     | 9.763     | .001 |
| Intercept                         | 918400.033              | 1  | 918400.033  | 20377.024 | .000 |
| country                           | 880.067                 | 2  | 440.033     | 9.763     | .001 |
| Error                             | 1216.900                | 27 | 45.070      |           |      |
| Total                             | 920497.000              | 30 |             |           |      |
| Corrected Total                   | 2096.967                | 29 |             |           |      |

a. R Squared = .420 (Adjusted R Squared = .377)

| Parameter Estimates        |                |            |        |      |                         |             |
|----------------------------|----------------|------------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
| Dependent Variable: height |                |            |        |      |                         |             |
| Parameter                  | B              | Std. Error | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|                            |                |            |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept                  | 172.400        | 2.123      | 81.207 | .000 | 168.044                 | 176.756     |
| [country=A]                | -2.400         | 3.002      | -.799  | .431 | -8.560                  | 3.760       |
| [country=B]                | 10.100         | 3.002      | 3.364  | .002 | 3.940                   | 16.260      |
| [country=C]                | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .      | .    | .                       | .           |

a. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

The Parameter Estimates table now looks slightly different: The intercept is the same, the dummy effects are presented in a slightly different way, and there is an extra row for country C where a regression coefficient  $B$  of 0 is reported, with no other information. The values for the other effects are exactly the same as with the previous analysis. This means we can interpret these country=A and

country=B effects as the effects of dummy variables: all observations start from an intercept of 172.40 and depending on whether the observation from country A or country B, you get an extra predicted height of -2.4 or 10.1, respectively. Observations from country C get an extra height of 0, so in effect nothing extra. (It seems that what SPSS is doing is creating an extra dummy variable for country C, but because this is not necessary, the effect is fixed to 0).

Also the Tests of Between-Subjects Effects table looks slightly different: instead of two separate effects for two dummy variables, we now see one row for the original variable Country. And in the column df (degrees of freedom), instead of 1 degree of freedom for a country effect, we see 2 degrees of freedom. So this suggests that the effects of the two dummy variables are now combined into one effect, with a particular  $F$ -value, and a  $p$ -value that is also different from those of the two separate dummy variable. This is actually the test for the null-hypothesis that all 3 means are equal. This is very different from the  $t$ -tests in the Parameter Estimates table. The  $t$ -test for the country=A effect specifically tests whether the average height in country A is different from the average height in country C (the reference country). The  $t$ -test for the country=B effect specifically tests whether the average height in country B is different from the average height in country C (the reference country). Since these do not refer to our research question regarding overall differences across all three countries, we do not report these  $t$ -tests, but report the overall  $F$ -test from the Tests of Between-Subjects Effects table.

### Reporting one-way ANOVA

In all cases where you have a categorical predictor variable with more than two categories, and where the null-hypothesis is about the equality of all means, you always report the  $F$ -statistic from the Tests of Between-Subjects Effects. You do that in the following way for this particular example:

“The null-hypothesis that all 3 means were equal was tested with a linear model (one-way analysis of variance). The results showed that the means in the population are not equal,  $F(2, 27) = 9.76$ ,  $MSE = 45.07$ ,  $p < 0.05$ .”

Always check the degrees of freedom of for your  $F$ -statistic. The first number refers to the number of dummy variables that are tested at once: this is the number of categories minus 1. The second number refers to the error degrees of freedom: this is the number of observations minus the number of effects in your model. In this model you have 30 data points and you have three effects (parameters): one intercept, one effect for Country=A, and one effect for Country=B. So your error degrees of freedom is  $30 - 3 = 27$ . Note that this error degrees of freedom is equal to that of the  $t$ -statistic.

## 6.5 $F$ -test for multiple group comparisons

## Chapter 7

# Moderation: testing interaction effects

### 7.1 Categorical by linear interaction

Suppose there is a linear relationship between age and vocabulary: the older you get, the more words you know. Suppose we have the following linear regression equation for this relationship:

$$vocab = 200 + 500 \times age + e \quad (7.1)$$

So according to this model, the expected number of words for a newborn baby (age=0) equals 200. This may sound silly, but suppose this model is a very good model for vocabulary size in children between 2 and 5 years of age. Then this equation tells us that the expected increase in vocabulary size is 500 words per year.

This model is meant for everybody in the Netherlands. But suppose that one researcher expects that the increase in words is much faster in children from high SES families than in children from low SES families. First he believes that vocabulary will be larger in higher SES children than in low SES children. In other words, he expects an effect of SES, over and above the effect of age:

$$vocab = 200 + 500 \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + e \quad (7.2)$$

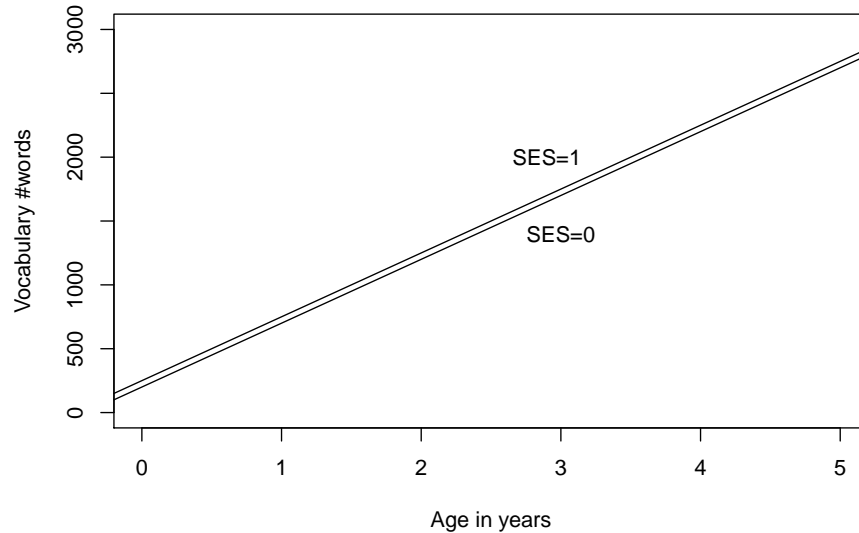
This main effect of SES is yet unknown and denoted by  $\beta_2$ . This linear equation is an example of a multiple regression.

Let's use some numerical example. Suppose age is coded in years, and SES is dummy coded, with a 1 for high SES and a 0 for low SES. Let  $\beta_2$ , the effect of SES, be 10. Then we can write out the linear equation for low SES and high SES separately.

$$lowSES : vocab = 200 + 500 \times age + 10 \times 0 + e = 200 + 500 \times age + e \quad (7.3)$$

$$highSES : vocab = 200 + 500 \times age + 10 \times 1 + e = (200 + 10) + 500 \times age + e \quad (7.4)$$

Figure ?? depicts the two regression lines for the high and low SES children separately. So we see that the effect of SES involves a change in the intercept: the intercept equals 200 for low SES children and the intercept for high SES children equals 210. The difference in intercept is indicated by the coefficient for SES. Note that the two regression lines are parallel: for every age, the difference between the two lines is equal tot 10. For every age therefore, the predicted number of words is 10 words more for high SES children than for low SES children.



However, our researcher also expects that the *yearly increase* in vocabulary is a bit lower than 500 words in low SES families, and a little bit higher than 500 words in high SES families. In other words, he believes that SES might *moderate* (affects, changes) the slope coefficient. Let's call the slope coefficient in this case  $\beta_1$ . In the above equation this slope parameter is equal to 500, but let's now let it be a linear function of SES:

$$\beta_1 = \alpha^* + \beta_3 \times SES \quad (7.5)$$

In words: the slope coefficient for the regression of vocabulary on age, is itself linearly related to SES. We predict the slope on the basis of SES. So now we have two linear equations for the relationship between vocabulary, age and SES:

$$vocab = 200 + \beta_1 \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + e \quad (7.6)$$

$$\beta_1 = \alpha^* + \beta_3 \times SES \quad (7.7)$$

We can rewrite this by plugging the second equation into the first one:

$$vocab = 200 + (\alpha^* + \beta_3 \times SES) \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + e \quad (7.8)$$

Multiplying this out gets us:

$$vocab = 200 + \alpha^* \times age + \beta_3 \times SES \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + e \quad (7.9)$$

If we rearrange the terms a bit, we get:

$$vocab = 200 + \alpha^* \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + \beta_3 \times SES \times age + e \quad (7.10)$$

Now this very much looks like a regression equation with one intercept and *three* slope coefficients: one for age ( $\alpha^*$ ), one for SES ( $\beta_2$ ) and one for SES  $\times$  age ( $\beta_3$ ).

we might want to change the label  $\alpha^*$  into  $\beta_1$  to get a more familiar looking form:

$$vocab = 200 + \beta_1 \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + \beta_3 \times SES \times age + e \quad (7.11)$$

So the first slope coefficient is the increase in vocabulary for every year that age increases ( $\beta_1$ ), the second slope coefficient is the increase in vocabulary for an increase of 1 on the SES variable ( $\beta_2$ ), and the third slope coefficient is the increase in vocabulary for every increase of 1 on the *product* of age and SES ( $\beta_3$ ).

So what does this mean exactly?

If we look at this equation:

$$\beta_1 = \alpha^* + \beta_3 \times SES \quad (7.12)$$

we see that a high positive value of  $\beta_3$  increases the size of  $\beta_1$ , which is the effect of age on vocabulary.

Suppose we find the following solution for the regression equation:

$$vocab = 200 + \beta_1 \times age + \beta_2 \times SES + \beta_3 \times SES \times age + e \quad (7.13)$$

$$vocab = 200 + 450 \times age + 125 \times SES + 100 \times SES \times age + e \quad (7.14)$$

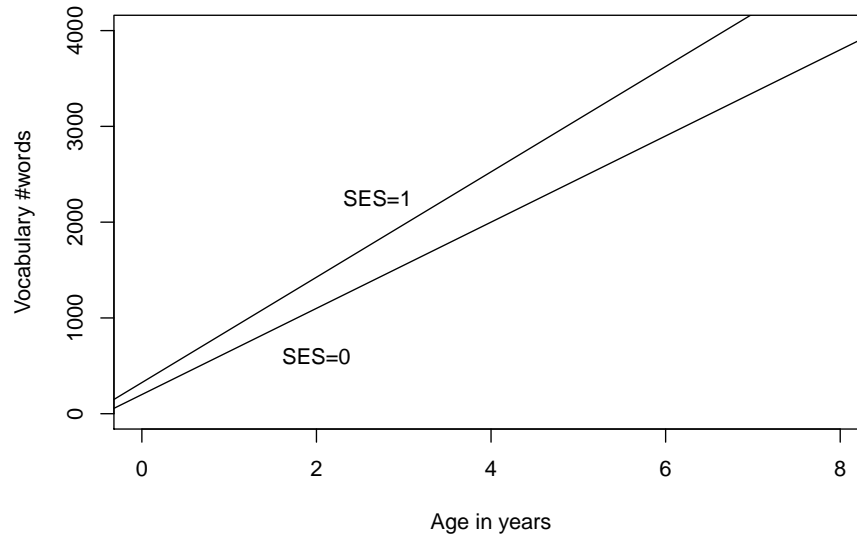
If we code low SES children as  $SES=0$ , and high SES children as  $SES=1$ , we can write the above equation into two regression equations, one for low SES children ( $SES=0$ ) and one for high SES children ( $SES=1$ ):

$$lowSES : vocab = 200 + 450 \times age + e \quad (7.15)$$

$$highSES : vocab = 200 + 450 \times age + 125 + 100 \times age + e \quad (7.16)$$

So for low SES children, the intercept is 200 and the regression slope for age is 450, so they learn 450 words per year. For high SES children, we see the same intercept of 200, with an extra 125 (this is the main effect of SES). So effectively their intercept is now 325. For the regression slope, we now have  $450 \times age + 100 \times age$  which is of course equal to  $550 \times age$ . So we see that the high SES group has both a different intercept, and a different slope: the increase in vocabulary is 550 per year: somewhat steeper than in low SES children. So yes, the researcher was right: vocabulary increase per year is faster in high SES children than in low SES children.

These two different regression lines are depicted below. It can be clearly seen that the lines have two different intercepts and two different slopes. That they have two different slopes can be seen from the fact that the lines are not parallel. One has a slope of 450 words per year and the other has a slope of 550 words per year. This difference in slope of 100 is exactly the size of the slope coefficient pertaining to the product  $SES \times age$ ,  $\beta_3$ .



The observation that the slope coefficient is different for different groups is called an *interaction effect*, or *interaction* for short. Other words for this



phenomenon are *modification* and *moderation*. In this case, SES is called the *modifier variable*: it modifies the relationship between age on vocabulary. (Note however that you could also interpret age as the modifier variable: the effect of SES is larger for older children than for younger children. In the plot you see that the difference between vocab for high and low SES children of age 6 is larger than it is for children of age 2.)

So, what do you have to do if you want to know if there is an interaction effect between age and SES on vocabulary size?

First you dummy code the nominal variable SES:

```
RECODE SES ('low'=0) ('high'=1) INTO SES_dummy.
EXECUTE.
```

Next we compute a new variable, that is, the product  $SES \times age$  (but use the dummy variable):

```
COMPUTE SESage = SES_dummy * age .
EXECUTE.
```

So now you have three variables for a multiple regression:

```
UNIANOVA vocab WITH age SES_dummy SESage
/ design=age SES_dummy SESage.
```

Note there is also a faster way of analyzing interaction effects in SPSS. The following syntax is exactly equivalent, but does not require the computation of the interaction variable *SESage*:

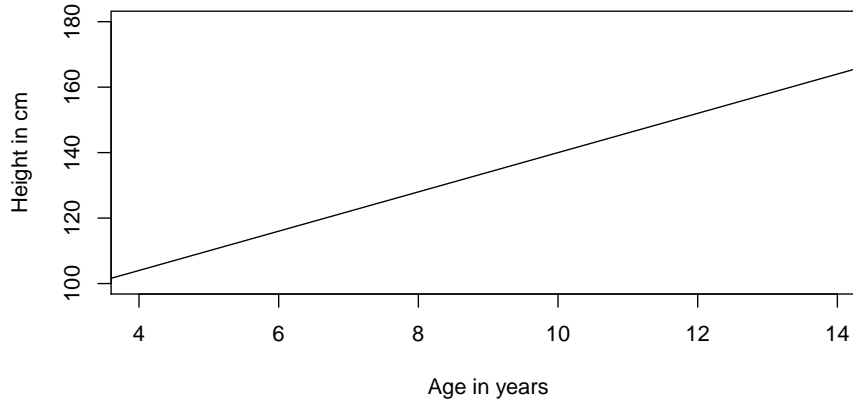
```
UNIANOVA vocab WITH age SES_dummy
/ design = age SES_dummy age*SESdummy
/ print = parameter.
```

With this design specification, SPSS computes the interaction variable automatically for you.

Let's look at some example output for another data set. A researcher is interested in childrens' height. She has data on children between the ages of 4 and 8, with measures on their height. She wants to know whether children growing up in the city grow just as fast as in the countryside. So the data might look something like this.

| child | location | age | height |
|-------|----------|-----|--------|
| 001   | city     | 5   | 120    |
| 002   | country  | 14  | 160    |
| 003   | city     | 4   | 121    |
| 004   | city     | 6   | 125    |
| 005   | country  | 9   | 140    |
| ...   | ...      | ... | ...    |

The general regression of height on age might something like this:



This regression line for the entire sample of children has a slope of around 6 cm per year. Now the researcher wants to know whether this slope is the same for children in the cities and in the countryside, in other words, do children grow as fast in the city as in the countryside? We might expect that location (city vs countryside) *moderates* the effect of age on height. We use the following SPSS syntax to study this *location*  $\times$  *age* effect, first creating a dummy variable for location, arbitrarily coding *country* as 1:

```
RECODE location ('city'=0) ('country'=1) INTO location_dummy.
EXECUTE.
UNIANOVA height WITH age location_dummy
/ design = age location_dummy age*location_dummy
/ print = parameter.
```

Below we find the corresponding SPSS output. So the null-hypothesis is that the two slopes are equal, in other words, that the interaction effect equals zero. In the output, this is the age \* location\_dummy effect.

In the table with the parameter estimates, we find the regression coefficients. So we can fill in the regression equation:

$$height = 96 + 4.6 \times age + 3.8 \times locationdummy - 0.368 \times age \times locationdummy + e$$

If we fill in 0s for the location dummy, we get the equation for city children:

$$height = 96 + 4.6 \times age + e$$

## ➔ Univariate Analysis of Variance

[DataSet1]

### Tests of Between-Subjects Effects

Dependent Variable: height

| Source               | Type III Sum of Squares | df | Mean Square | F       | Sig. |
|----------------------|-------------------------|----|-------------|---------|------|
| Corrected Model      | 1487.283 <sup>a</sup>   | 3  | 495.761     | 17.616  | .004 |
| Intercept            | 7139.880                | 1  | 7139.880    | 253.696 | .000 |
| age                  | 1214.207                | 1  | 1214.207    | 43.144  | .001 |
| location_dummy       | 3.079                   | 1  | 3.079       | .109    | .754 |
| age * location_dummy | 1.450                   | 1  | 1.450       | .052    | .829 |
| Error                | 140.717                 | 5  | 28.143      |         |      |
| Total                | 154509.000              | 9  |             |         |      |
| Corrected Total      | 1628.000                | 8  |             |         |      |

a. R Squared = .914 (Adjusted R Squared = .862)

### Parameter Estimates

Dependent Variable: height

| Parameter            | B      | Std. Error | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|----------------------|--------|------------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                      |        |            |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept            | 96.652 | 6.068      | 15.928 | .000 | 81.053                  | 112.251     |
| age                  | 4.626  | .704       | 6.568  | .001 | 2.815                   | 6.436       |
| location_dummy       | 3.848  | 11.633     | .331   | .754 | -26.055                 | 33.751      |
| age * location_dummy | -.368  | 1.621      | -.227  | .829 | -4.535                  | 3.799       |

So the intercept equals 96 and the slope equals 4.6.

If we fill in 1s for the location dummy variable, we get the equation for country side children:

$$\begin{aligned}
 height &= 96 + 4.6 \times age + 3.8 - 0.368 \times age + e \\
 &= (96 + 3.8) + (4.6 - 0.368) \times age + e
 \end{aligned} \tag{7.17}$$

We see that that the intercept is now equal to the intercept is  $96 + 3.8$ , and the slope equals  $4.6 - 0.368$ .

So, we know that the slope for countryside children is 0.368 less steep than for city children. In this sample, it seems that children in the city grow 4.626 centimeters per year (on average), but that children in the countryside grow  $4.626 - 0.368 = 4.258$  centimeters per year (on average). Is this value of 0.368 possible if the value in the entire population of children equals 0? In other words, is the value of 0.368 significantly different from 0? No, the effect of 0.368 is not significant,  $t(5) = -0.23, p > 0.05$ . We therefore do not reject the null-hypothesis and conclude that there is *no* evidence that children in the city grow at a different pace than children in the countryside.

In this section we discussed the situation that regression slopes might be different in two groups: the regression slope might be steeper in one group than in another group. So suppose that we had a continuous predictor  $x$  for a continuous dependent variable  $y$ , we said that a particular dummy variable  $z$  moderated the effect of  $x$  on  $y$ . This moderation was quantified by an interaction effect,  $x \times z$ .

So suppose we have the following regression equation:

$$y = -b_0 + b_1 \times x + b_2 \times dummy + b_3 \times x \times dummy + e$$

Here, we call  $b_0$  the intercept,  $b_1$  the main effect of  $x$ ,  $b_2$  the main effect of the dummy variable, and  $b_3$  the interaction effect of  $x$  and the dummy.

### 7.1.1 Exercises

We have the following regression equation, with  $y$  as dependent variable,  $x$  as a continuous predictor variable, and a dummy variable *dummy*.

$$y = 5.3 + 3.6 \times x + 3.8 \times dummy + 8.2 \times x \times dummy + e$$

Write down the regression equation in the case the dummy variable equals 0.  
 Write down the regression equation in the case the dummy variable equals 1.  
 What is the intercept if the dummy variable equals 0?  
 What is the intercept if the dummy variable equals 1?  
 What is the slope if the dummy variable equals 0?  
 What is the slope if the dummy variable equals 1?  
 How large is the difference in intercepts between the two groups?  
 Where can we find this value in the equation?  
 How large is the difference in slopes between the two groups?  
 Where can we find this value in the equation?

We have the following regression equation, with  $y$  as dependent variable,  $x$  as a continuous predictor variable, and a dummy variable *dummy*.

$$y = -4.1 + 1.2 \times x - 6.5 \times dummy - 1.3 \times x \times dummy + e$$

Write down the regression equation in the case the dummy variable equals 0.  
 Write down the regression equation in the case the dummy variable equals 1.  
 What is the intercept if the dummy variable equals 0?  
 What is the intercept if the dummy variable equals 1?

What is the slope if the dummy variable equals 0?  
 What is the slope if the dummy variable equals 1?  
 How large is the difference in intercepts between the two groups?  
 Where can we find this value in the equation?  
 How large is the difference in slopes between the two groups?  
 Where can we find this value in the equation?

Suppose we find the following linear equation:

$$\text{mathscore} = 16.3 + 5.5 \times \text{age} - 0.8 \times \text{sex} - 1.2 \times \text{age} \times \text{sex} + e$$

What is the main effect of *age* on *mathscore*?  
 What is the main effect of the *sex* on *mathscore*?  
 How large is the interaction effect of *age* and *sex* on *mathscore*?  
 What is the predicted *mathscore* for a girl of age 12, if *sex* is coded 1 for boys?  
 What is the predicted *mathscore* for a boy of age 22, if *sex* is coded 1 for boys?

## 7.2 Interaction with two dummy variables

In the previous section we discussed the situation that regression slopes might be different in two groups. Now we discuss the situation that we have two dummy variables, and that we're interested whether there is an interaction effect. In other words, does one dummy variable moderate the effect of the other dummy variable?

Suppose in country A, men are on average taller than women. In order to study this effect, we analyze data from a random sample of inhabitants, and we come up with the following regression equation:

$$\text{height} = 165 + 10 \times \text{sex} + e$$

In this equation, *sex* is coded 0 for females, and 1 for males. So, the predicted height for a female from country A equals 165 and the predicted height for a male equals  $165 + 10 \times 1 = 175$ .

Suppose we also study height in country B. Again with a random sample of inhabitants, we find the following regression equation:

$$\text{height} = 175 + 15 \times \text{sex} + e$$

In this equation, the predicted height for a female from country B equals 175

and the predicted height for a male equals  $175 + 15 \times 1 = 190$ .

So it seems that in general, the people in the random sample from country B are taller than the people in the random sample from country A: both men and women show taller averages in country B. But we also see another difference between the two countries: the average difference between men and women is 10 cm in country A, but 15 cm in country B. So we can say that in these samples, the effect of sex on height is a little bit different in both countries. Now of course this difference could be a coincidence, a random result from sampling, or it could be a real thing in the populations. Suppose we'd like to know whether the effect of sex on height is different in the two countries at population level. We'd like to know whether country is a moderator of the effect of age on height. So we use the following regression equation:

$$height = b_0 + b_1 \times sex + b_2 \times country + b_3 \times sex \times country + e$$

and perform a regression equation. We *could* use the same SPSS syntax as in the previous section, making dummy variables ourselves and analysing them quantitatively using the WITH syntax:

```
RECODE country ('A'=0) ('B'=1) INTO country.
RECODE sex ('female'=0) ('male'=1) INTO sex.
EXECUTE.
UNIANOVA height WITH sex country
/ design = sex country sex*country
/ print = parameter.
```

However, the easier option, as we have seen in the previous section, is to let SPSS do the dummy coding. Simply omit the RECODE lines and use the BY syntax to indicate that you want to use country and sex in a qualitative way using dummy coding:

```
UNIANOVA height BY sex country
/ design = sex country sex*country
/ print = parameter.
```

From now on, we recommend using the BY syntax for variables that you wish to analyze qualitatively (all categorical variables, and sometimes ordinal variables).

In the output we find the following values:

$$height = 165 + 10 \times sex + 10 \times country + 5 \times sex \times country + e$$

So the predicted value for specific subgroups are the following:

| Sex    | Country | equation  | predicted height |
|--------|---------|---|------------------|
| Female | A       | $165 + 10 \times 0 + 10 \times 0 + 5 \times 0 \times 0$ | 165              |
| Male   | A       | $165 + 10 \times 1 + 10 \times 0 + 5 \times 1 \times 0$ | 175              |
| Female | B       | $165 + 10 \times 0 + 10 \times 1 + 5 \times 0 \times 1$ | 175              |
| Male   | B       | $165 + 10 \times 1 + 10 \times 1 + 5 \times 1 \times 1$ | 190              |

Note that we see exactly the same predicted values for the subgroups as we saw in the separate analyses for countries A and B. The interaction effect in this example is equal to 5: it means that the effect of sex (being a male) on height is 5 cm larger in country A than in country B. See that the difference in height between males and females is 10 cm in country A and 15 cm in country B. So the difference in the differences equals 5 cm. But note that you can also look at it from another angle: the difference between country A and B equals 10 cm for females, and 15 cm for males. So you can equally say that Sex moderates the effect of country: the effect of country is larger for males than for females, and this difference is again 5 cm.

Whether the interaction effect also exists at the population level, we can see from SPSS output. If the effect is significant, we conclude that the difference between males and females in height is different in two countries. Or, equivalently, we conclude that the difference in height between the two countries is different for males and females. If the effect is not significant, we conclude that the difference in height between females and males is the same in country A and B. Or, equivalently, we conclude that the difference in height between the two countries is the same for males and females.

### 7.3 More than two groups

Now what happens is we have categorical variables with more than two levels? Suppose we want to do the same study on height but now in countries A, B and C. As we saw earlier, in SPSS we can treat variables in a regression analysis either as quantitative or qualitative. If we want to treat variable as quantitative, we use the word WITH, and if we want to treat the variable as qualitative, we use the word BY in the SPSS syntax. For dummy variables, both options are possible, but we generally recommend using the WITH word. When you have a variable with more than two levels, say country with three levels, we generally recommend using the BY word. This makes SPSS turn the categorical variable into two dummy variables automatically. In general, if you have  $K$  levels in a categorical variable, SPSS computes  $K - 1$  dummy variables.

Suppose you have the categorical variable country with levels A, B and C, and you have the sex variable dummy coded as 1 for males and 0 for females. You want to treat the dummy variable quantitatively, and the country variable

qualitatively. Then with the next syntax you can run a regression analysis with a main effect of sex, a main effect of country and an interaction effect of sex by country in the following way.

```
UNIANOVA height BY country WITH sex
/ design = sex country sex*country
/ print = parameter.
```

The SPSS output might look something like this:

**Between-Subjects Factors**

|           | N  |
|-----------|----|
| country A | 10 |
| B         | 10 |
| C         | 10 |

**Tests of Between-Subjects Effects**

Dependent Variable: height

| Source          | Type III Sum of Squares | df | Mean Square | F         | Sig. |
|-----------------|-------------------------|----|-------------|-----------|------|
| Corrected Model | 1712.167 <sup>a</sup>   | 5  | 342.433     | 21.358    | .000 |
| Intercept       | 439984.067              | 1  | 439984.067  | 27441.834 | .000 |
| sex             | 410.700                 | 1  | 410.700     | 25.615    | .000 |
| country         | 298.133                 | 2  | 149.067     | 9.297     | .001 |
| country * sex   | 421.400                 | 2  | 210.700     | 13.141    | .000 |
| Error           | 384.800                 | 24 | 16.033      |           |      |
| Total           | 920497.000              | 30 |             |           |      |
| Corrected Total | 2096.967                | 29 |             |           |      |

a. R Squared = .816 (Adjusted R Squared = .778)

**Parameter Estimates**

Dependent Variable: height

| Parameter         | B              | Std. Error | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-------------------|----------------|------------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                   |                |            |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept         | 173.800        | 1.791      | 97.056 | .000 | 170.104                 | 177.496     |
| sex               | -2.800         | 2.532      | -1.106 | .280 | -8.027                  | 2.427       |
| [country=A]       | -8.800         | 2.532      | -3.475 | .002 | -14.027                 | -3.573      |
| [country=B]       | 1.200          | 2.532      | .474   | .640 | -4.027                  | 6.427       |
| [country=C]       | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .      | .    | .                       | .           |
| [country=A] * sex | 12.800         | 3.581      | 3.574  | .002 | 5.408                   | 20.192      |
| [country=B] * sex | 17.800         | 3.581      | 4.970  | .000 | 10.408                  | 25.192      |
| [country=C] * sex | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .      | .    | .                       | .           |

a. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

Here we see that 2 dummy variables have been computed, automatically by SPSS. One for being in country A, and one for being in country B. Country C is here used as the so-called reference category. This SPSS output is therefore equivalent to the equation:

$$height = 173.8 - 2.8 \times sex - 8.8 \times CountryA + 1.2 \times CountryB$$



$$+ 12.8 \times \text{CountryA} \times \text{sex} + 17.8 \times \text{CountryB} \times \text{sex} + e$$

All observations done in country C for variables CountryA and CountryB are coded as 0. So let's do the math to get the predicted heights for each subgroup. Females are coded as 0 and males as 1, so a Female from country C gets the predicted value 173.8. Let's do the computations for all subgroups:

| Sex    | Country | equation   | height |
|--------|---------|--|--------|
| Female | A       | $173.8 - 2.8 \times 0 - 8.8 \times 1 + 1.2 \times 0 + 12.8 \times 1 \times 0 + 17.8 \times 0 \times 0$ | 165    |
| Male   | A       | $173.8 - 2.8 \times 1 - 8.8 \times 1 + 1.2 \times 0 + 12.8 \times 1 \times 1 + 17.8 \times 0 \times 1$ | 175    |
| Female | B       | $173.8 - 2.8 \times 0 - 8.8 \times 0 + 1.2 \times 1 + 12.8 \times 0 \times 0 + 17.8 \times 1 \times 0$ | 175    |
| Male   | B       | $173.8 - 2.8 \times 1 - 8.8 \times 0 + 1.2 \times 1 + 12.8 \times 0 \times 1 + 17.8 \times 1 \times 1$ | 190    |
| Female | C       | $173.8 - 2.8 \times 0 - 8.8 \times 0 + 1.2 \times 0 + 12.8 \times 0 \times 0 + 17.8 \times 0 \times 0$ | 173.8  |
| Male   | C       | $173.8 - 2.8 \times 1 - 8.8 \times 0 + 1.2 \times 0 + 12.8 \times 0 \times 1 + 17.8 \times 0 \times 1$ | 171    |

Note that we now have very different values for the regression parameters than in the analysis with only countries A and B (see Table ...), but nevertheless we end up with the same expected heights in Countries A and B. The difference in the parameter values stems from the fact that we have now treated country C as the reference category (dummy variable equal to 0), whereas in the previous two country analysis, we treated country A as the reference category (dummy equal to 0). In the output we see that the CountryA by sex interaction effect is significant: there is an extra height of 12.8 cms seen in males from country A, over and above the main effects of being male in general and being from country A. In other words, the effect of being male is larger in country A than it is in Country C (the reference country). We also see this in the predicted means: male-female difference in country C is -2.8 (males shorter), but in country A it is +10 (males larger). In the output we also see that the CountryB by sex interaction effect is significant: the effect of being male is 17.8 cm larger in country B than in Country C (the reference category). From the means we see that the male-female difference is 15 in country B, which is 17.8 cm more than the -2.8 in country C. Both these effects are significant. Moreover, from the ANOVA table (Tests of Between-Subjects Effects) we see that these two interaction effects overall are significantly different from 0. So we conclude that in the populations of countries A, B and C, the difference in height between males and females are significantly different,  $F(2, 24) = 13.141, MSE = 210.70, p < 0.05$ .

Alternatively, but equivalently, we may conclude that the differences in height across the three countries, are significantly different for males than for females,  $F(2, 24) = 13.141, MSE = 210.70, p < 0.05$ .

### Exercises

From a sample of data on height, country, and weight, we get the following linear equation:

$$\widehat{weight} = 40 + 30 \times CountryA + 0.4 \times height + 0.1 \times CountryA \times height$$

1. What is the expected weight for an individual from country A with a height of 1.5?
2. What is the expected weight for an individual from country B with a height of 1.0?
3. How large is the slope coefficient of height in country A?
4. How large is slope coefficient of height in country B?

### Answers

1.

$$\widehat{weight} = 40 + 30 \times 1 + 0.4 \times 1.5 + 0.1 \times 1 \times 1.5 = 70.75$$

2.

$$\widehat{weight} = 40 + 30 \times 0 + 0.4 \times 1.0 + 0.1 \times 0 \times 1.0 = 40.4$$

3.  $0.4 + 0.1 = 0.5$

4. 0.4

## 7.4 Linear by linear interaction

## Chapter 8

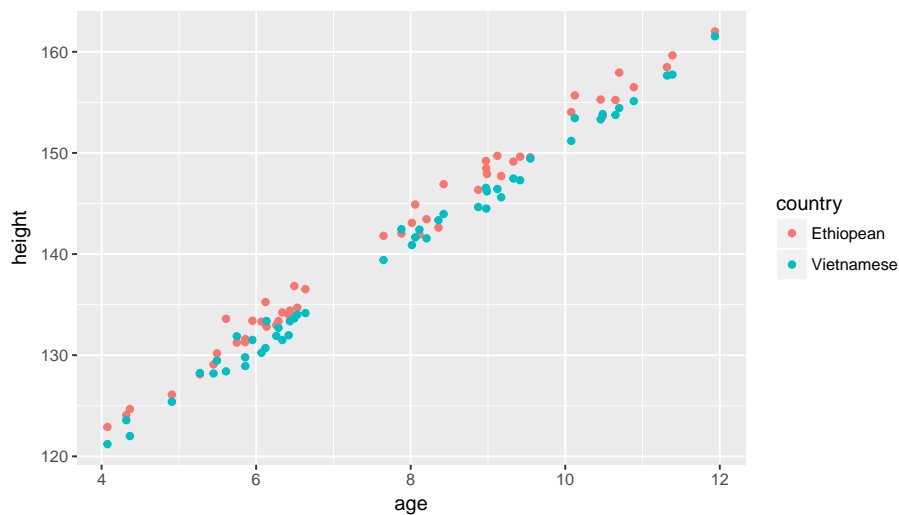
# Assumptions of linear models RUYA

### 8.0.1 Independence

The assumption of independence is about the way in which observations are similar and dissimilar. Take for instance the following regression equation for children's height predicted by their age:

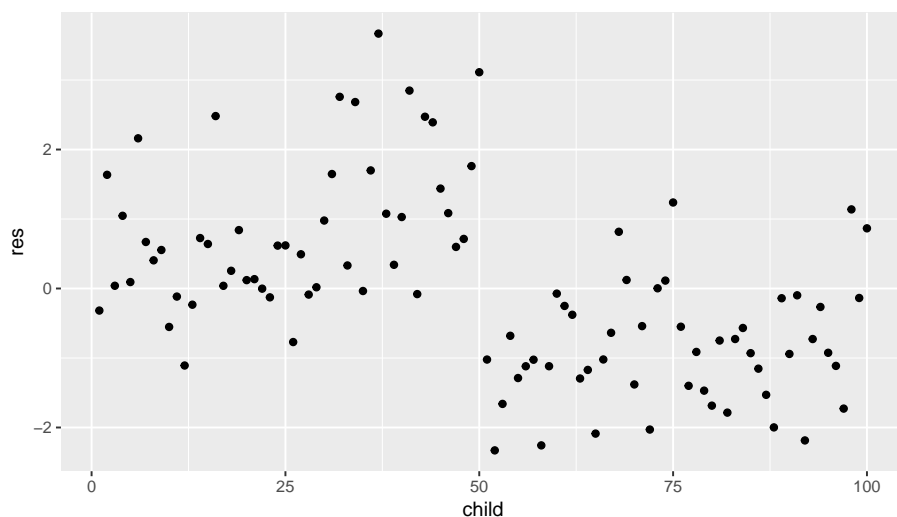
$$height = 100 + 5 \times age + e \quad (8.1)$$

This regression equation predicts that a child of age 5 has a height of 125 and a child of age 10 has a height of 150. In fact, all children of age 5 have the same predicted height of 125 and all children of age 10 have the same predicted height of 150. Of course, in reality, children of the same age will have very different heights: they differ. According to the above regression equation, children are similar in height because they have the same height, but they differ because of the random term  $e$  that has a normal distribution: predictor age makes them similar, residual  $e$  makes them dissimilar. Now, if this is all there is, then this is a good model. But let's suppose that we're studying height in an international group of 50 Ethiopian children and 50 Vietnamese children. Let's plot their heights:



```
##
## Call:
## lm(formula = height ~ age + country + age * country, data = data)
##
## Residuals:
##      Min       1Q   Median       3Q      Max
## -1.9692 -0.7366 -0.1769  0.6061  2.8313
##
## Coefficients:
##              Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
## (Intercept)   102.57196    0.53708  190.981 <0.0000000000000002 ***
## age             5.02598    0.06686   75.168 <0.0000000000000002 ***
## countryVietnamese -1.57419    0.75954  -2.073    0.0409 *
## age:countryVietnamese -0.01771    0.09456  -0.187    0.8518
## ---
## Signif. codes:  0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## Residual standard error: 0.988 on 96 degrees of freedom
## Multiple R-squared:  0.9916, Adjusted R-squared:  0.9913
## F-statistic: 3779 on 3 and 96 DF, p-value: < 0.0000000000000022
```

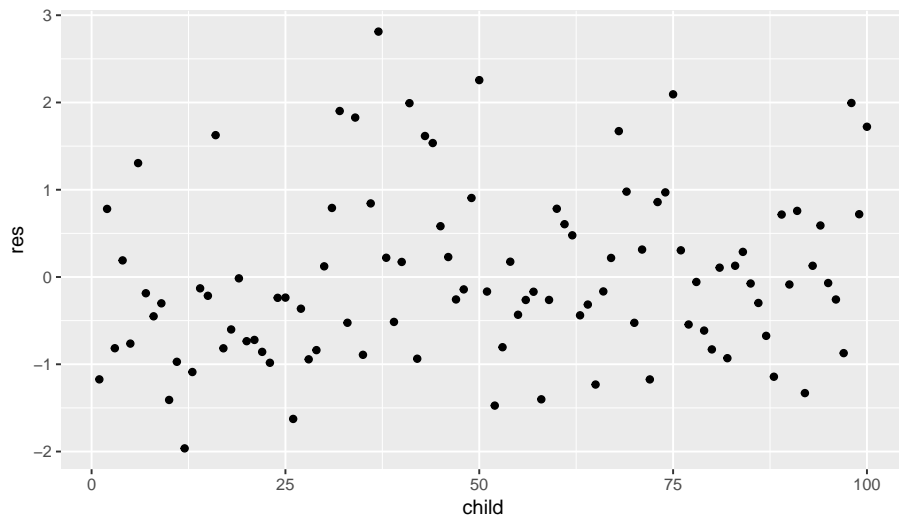
From this graph, we see that heights are similar because of age: older children are taller than younger children. But we also see that children are similar because of their national background: Ehtiopian children are systematically taller than Vietnamese children, irrespective of age. So here we see that a simple regression of height on age is not a good model. We see that when we estimate the simple regression on age and look at the residuals:



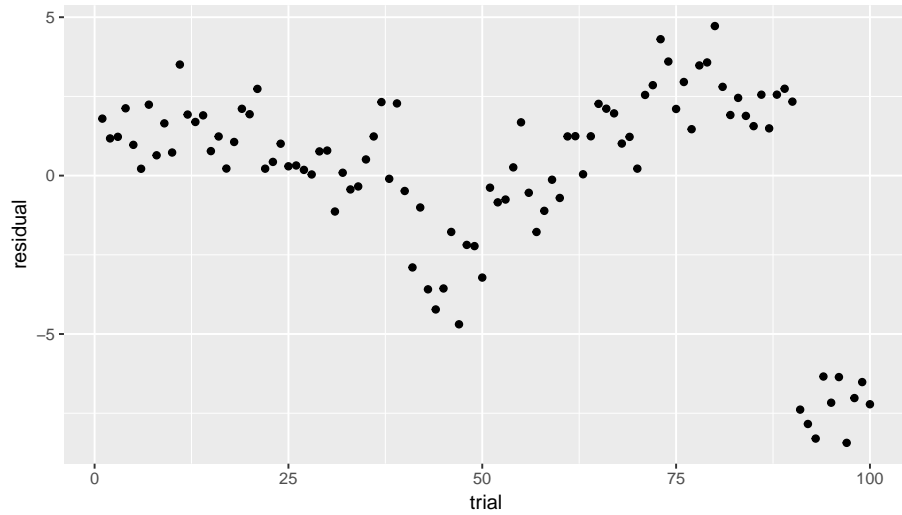
As our model predicts random residuals, we expect a random scatter of residuals. However, what we see here is a systematic order in the residuals: they tend to be positive for the first 50 children and negative for the last 50 children. These turn out to be the Ethiopian and the Vietnamese children, respectively. This systematic order in the residuals is a violation of independence: the residuals should be random, and they are not. The residuals are dependent on country: positive for Ethiopians, negative for Vietnamese children. Thus, there is more than just age that makes children similar. If we use multiple regression, including both age and country, we get the following regression equation:

$$height = 102.641 + 5.017 \times age - 1.712 \times country + e \quad (8.2)$$

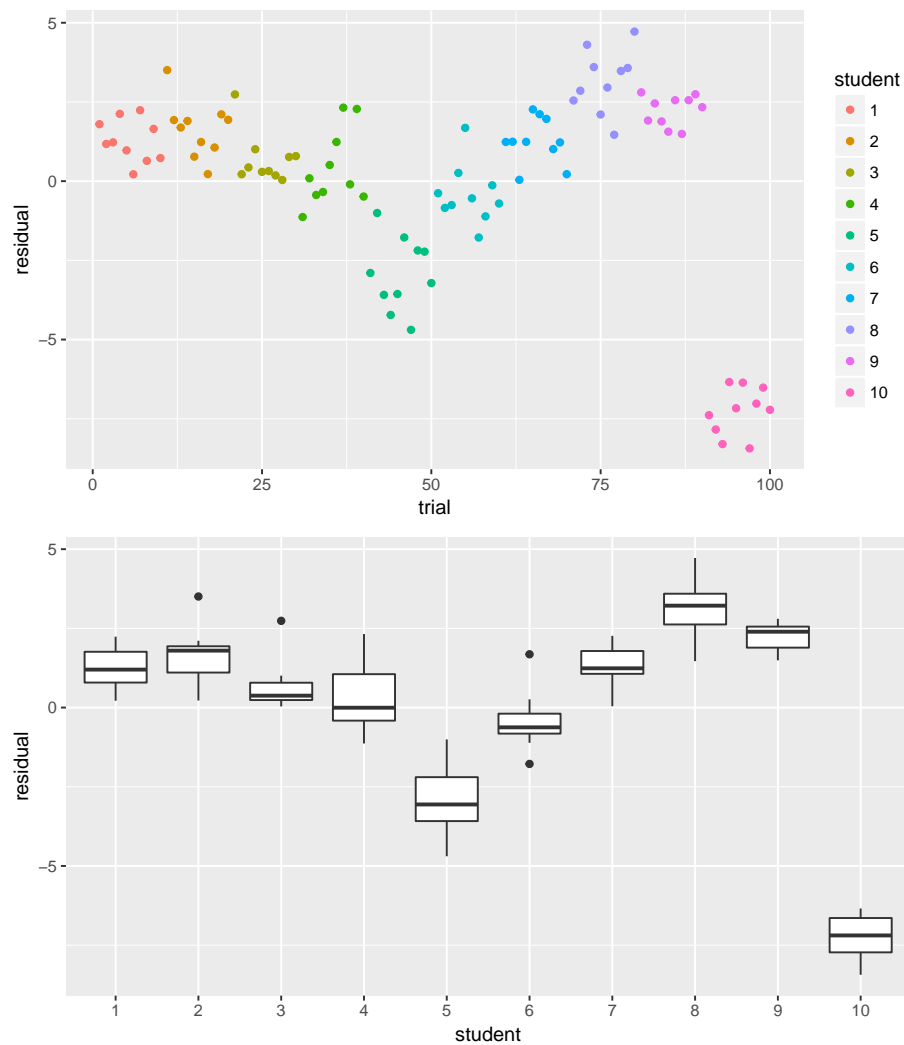
When we now plot the residuals we get a nice random scatter:



Another typical example of non random scatter of residuals is the following:



They come from an analysis of reaction times, done on 10 students where we also measured their IQ. Each student was measured on 10 trials. We predicted reaction time on the basis of student's IQ using a simple regression analysis. The residuals are clearly not random, and if we look more closely, we see some clustering if we give different colours for the data from the different students:



We see that residuals that are close together come from the same student. So, reaction times are not only similar because of IQ, but also because they come from the same student: clearly something else other than IQ explains why reaction times are dissimilar across individuals. The residuals in this analysis are not independent given IQ, they are dependent on the student. Thus, the assumption of independently distributed residuals is violated.

### 8.0.2 Linearity (additivity)

### 8.0.3 Homogeneity of variance

### 8.0.4 Residuals normally distributed

## 8.1 Testing assumptions

### 8.1.1 Independence

Check the residuals, do you see any regularities? More specifically: Do you see any clustering?

### 8.1.2 Linearity (additivity)

### 8.1.3 Homogeneity of variance

### 8.1.4 Residuals normally distributed

Make a histogram of the residuals: is the shape symmetric or skew? Is it more or less bell-shaped? Note that for small data sets, the shape is never perfectly normal. It should however have one peak and be symmetric.

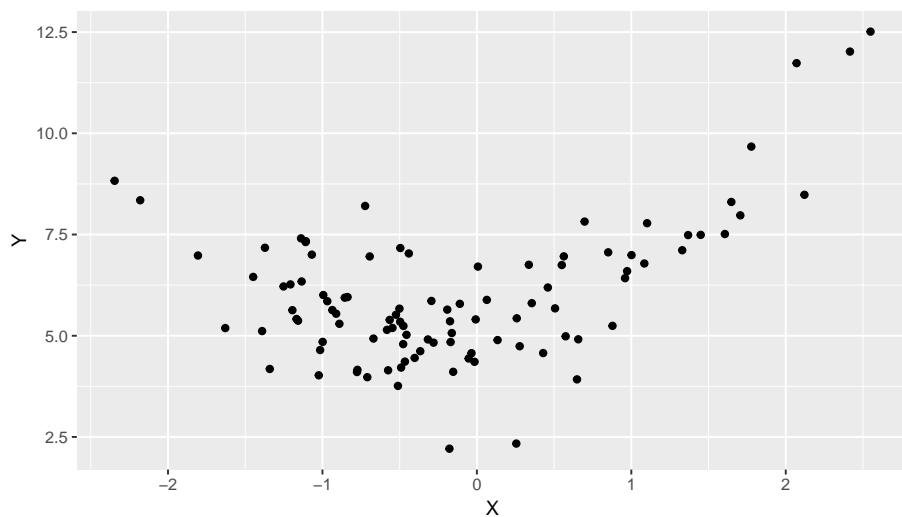
### 8.1.5 What to do when assumptions are violated?

When the assumption of independence is violated, try including more predictors in your regression model. Like in the example of height in children, adding country into the equation solved the problem. In the case of reaction times, it was not clear what explains the clustering of residuals: we only know that reaction times from the same person were very similar. In such situations, consider linear *mixed* models, to be discussed in a later chapter, and include a so-called *random factor*, in this case for students.

### 8.1.6 nonlinearity

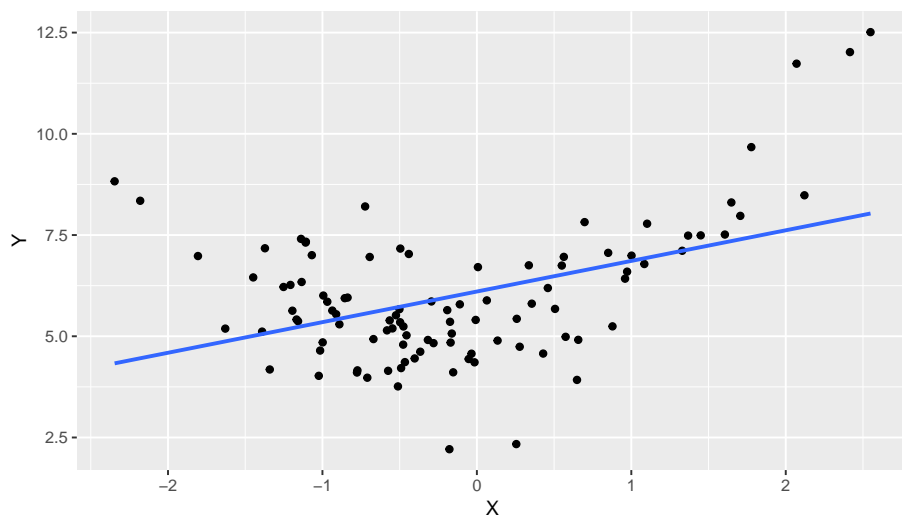
If we have data and we analyze these with a linear (mixed) model, we can find nonlinearity. In that case we might introduce a quadratic term to make it more linear. For example, suppose we have the following data set, summarized in a scatter plot:





We might then fit the following linear model, and find that it does not fit the data well:

$$y = b_0 + b_1X + e \quad (8.3)$$



A better model might be gained by introducing a new variable  $X_2$  that is computed by multiplying variable  $X$  by itself:  $X_2 = X^2$ , and use this as an extra predictor:

$$y = b_0 + b_1X + b_2X_2 + e \quad (8.4)$$

## Chapter 9

# Linear modelling: more advanced topics

### 9.0.1 Planned comparisons

Suppose you have height data from three countries: Greece, Italy, and Norway. You might wish to know whether in these populations there is a difference in average height. If that is all you want to know, you can perform the SPSS UNIANOVA analysis described above. In that case, the null-hypothesis is

$$H_0 : \mu_{Greece} = \mu_{Italy} = \mu_{Norway}$$

However, suppose your most important hypothesis is really much more specific: you only want to know whether the average height in Italy is different from the average height in Greece. The corresponding hypothesis would then be:

$$H_0 : \mu_{Greece} = \mu_{Italy}$$

In such cases, where the null-hypothesis is more specific than simply stating "there are differences among the groups", then you should perform *planned comparisons*. Here you would like to make a comparison between the average heights of Greece and Italy. You could also say you'd like to *contrast* the average height of Greece with that of Italy.

We then have to define this contrast in such a way that SPSS knows what we want. So we could define our contrast in a similar vein as the null-hypothesis. Let's call the contrast  $\gamma_1$ .

$$\gamma_1 : \mu_{Greece} = \mu_{Italy}$$

This contrast could also be written such that there is zero on the right-hand

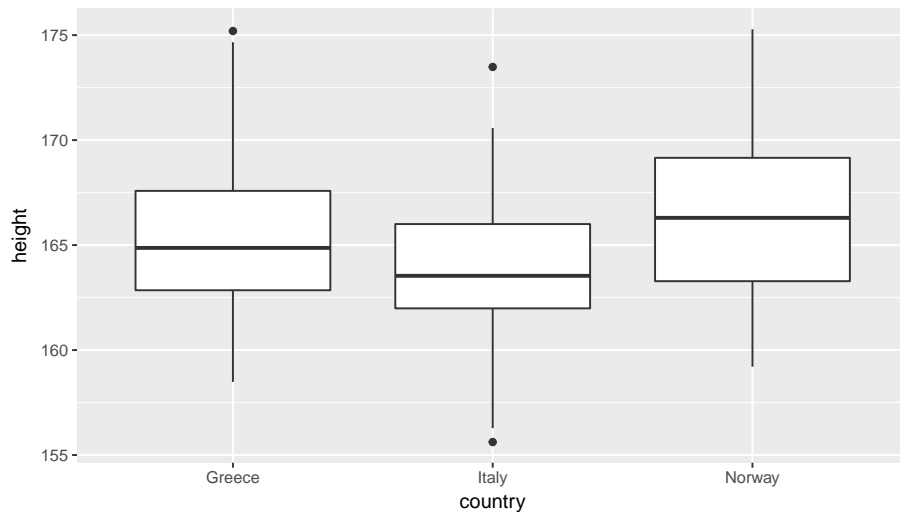
side of the equation, like this:

$$\gamma_1 : \mu_{Greece} - \mu_{Italy} = 0$$

This is the preferred way of specifying contrasts: having a zero on the right-hand side. And how about Norway? How do we add Norway into this contrast? Well, notice that you could also write the contrast like this:

$$\gamma_1 : (1) \times \mu_{Greece} + (-1) \times \mu_{Italy} + (0) \times \mu_{Norway} = 0$$

So we could code this specific contrast with the numbers preceding the group means: A 1 for Italy, a -1 for Greece and a 0 for Norway. For SPSS therefore, to specify a contrast, we only need this coding. This can be done in the following way. Suppose you have the following data on height, summarized in a boxplot:



Note that in this SPSS data set, the country variable is coded 1 for Greece, 2 for Italy and 3 for Norway. Then we could use the following syntax to ask for the specific comparison (or contrast) of the first and the second group, that is, Greece and Italy, respectively. So group 1 (=Greece) gets a 1, group 2 (=Italy) gets a -1, and group 3 (=Norway) gets a 0, so our coded contrast looks like  $(1, -1, 0)$ .

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=SPECIAL(1 -1 0).
```

Below we see the output:

From the output, we see first see that the general null-hypothesis that all three countries have the same average height is rejected,  $F(2, 147) = 6.14$ ,  $MSE = 14.77$ ,  $p = 0.003$ . This test has 2 degrees of freedom, one for each of the two

|         |      |        |    |
|---------|------|--------|----|
| country | 1.00 | Greece | 50 |
|         | 2.00 | Italy  | 50 |
|         | 3.00 | Norway | 50 |

Tests of Between-Subjects Effects

| Dependent Variable: height |                         |     |             |            |      |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|-----|-------------|------------|------|
| Source                     | Type III Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F          | Sig. |
| Corrected Model            | 181.382 <sup>a</sup>    | 2   | 90.691      | 6.142      | .003 |
| Intercept                  | 4097387.37              | 1   | 4097387.37  | 277508.194 | .000 |
| country                    | 181.382                 | 2   | 90.691      | 6.142      | .003 |
| Error                      | 2170.444                | 147 | 14.765      |            |      |
| Total                      | 4099739.20              | 150 |             |            |      |
| Corrected Total            | 2351.826                | 149 |             |            |      |

a. R Squared = .077 (Adjusted R Squared = .065)

Contrast Results (K Matrix)

| country Special Contrast |  | Dependent Variable         |
|--------------------------|--|----------------------------|
|                          |  | height                     |
| L1                       | Contrast Estimate                      | 1.008                      |
|                          | Hypothesized Value                     | 0                          |
|                          | Difference (Estimate - Hypothesized)   | 1.008                      |
|                          | Std. Error                             | .769                       |
|                          | Sig.                                   | .192                       |
|                          | 95% Confidence Interval for Difference | Lower Bound<br>Upper Bound |
|                          |  | -.511<br>2.527             |

Test Results

| Dependent Variable: height |                |     |             |       |      |
|----------------------------|----------------|-----|-------------|-------|------|
| Source                     | Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F     | Sig. |
| Contrast                   | 25.406         | 1   | 25.406      | 1.721 | .192 |
| Error                      | 2170.444       | 147 | 14.765      |       |      |

Page 1

dummy variables that are needed to test this model. The error degrees of freedom equals 147: that is the number of data points (150) minus the number of parameters in the model: one for the intercept and two for the dummy variables, so  $150 - 3 = 147$ .

Next, we see the results for our *specific* null-hypothesis (the contrast): that the means for Greece and Italy are equal, irrespective of Norway. We see a Contrast Estimate of 1.008 and a significance level of  $p = 0.19$ . So the contrast is positive: what does this mean? Well, let's put the 1.008 into our contrast above:

$$\gamma_1 : (1) \times \mu_{Greece} + (-1) \times \mu_{Italy} + (0) \times \mu_{Norway} = 1.008$$

which can be simplified to

$$\gamma_1 : \mu_{Greece} - \mu_{Italy} = 1.008$$

So the 1.008 indicates that the average height in Italy is 1.008 cm shorter than

in Greece, at least in our sample. The relatively high  $p$ -value indicates that the population means are however not different: we do not reject the null-hypothesis that the average heights are the same. We also see an  $F$ -test for this contrast,  $F(1, 147) = 1.721, MSE = 14.76, p = 0.19$ . Since the first degrees of freedom number is a 1, we know that  $F$  is the same as a squared  $t$ ,  $t^2$ . So, an equivalent presentation of the contrast effect would be  $t(147) = 2.96, p = 0.19$ .

Now perhaps you realize, why didn't we do a  $t$ -test in the first place? We might have taken the Greece and Italy data separately, used a dummy variable and then run an ordinary linear model. Well, let's see what would happen then. First we let SPSS select only the Greece and Italy data with the SELECT IF syntax, and next run an UNIANOVA, using the BY keyword for country to indicate that we treat it as a qualitative variable. We also let the selection be preceded by a TEMPORARY command, to indicate that the selection only applies to the analysis that follows.

```
TEMPORARY.
SELECT IF (country<3).
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/PRINT = PARAMETER.
```

Below we see the output:

#### → Univariate Analysis of Variance

| Between-Subjects Factors |             |    |  |
|--------------------------|-------------|----|--|
| country                  | Value Label | N  |  |
| 1.00                     | Greece      | 50 |  |
| 2.00                     | Italy       | 50 |  |

| Tests of Between-Subjects Effects |                         |     |             |            |      |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------|-----|-------------|------------|------|
| Dependent Variable: height        |                         |     |             |            |      |
| Source                            | Type III Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F          | Sig. |
| Corrected Model                   | 25.406 <sup>a</sup>     | 1   | 25.406      | 1.880      | .173 |
| Intercept                         | 2707809.07              | 1   | 2707809.07  | 200384.457 | .000 |
| country                           | 25.406                  | 1   | 25.406      | 1.880      | .173 |
| Error                             | 1324.281                | 98  | 13.513      |            |      |
| Total                             | 2709158.76              | 100 |             |            |      |
| Corrected Total                   | 1349.687                | 99  |             |            |      |

a. R Squared = .019 (Adjusted R Squared = .009)

| Parameter Estimates        |                |            |         |      |                         |             |
|----------------------------|----------------|------------|---------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
| Dependent Variable: height |                |            |         |      |                         |             |
| Parameter                  | B              | Std. Error | t       | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|                            |                |            |         |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept                  | 164.050        | .520       | 315.562 | .000 | 163.019                 | 165.082     |
| [country=1.00]             | 1.008          | .735       | 1.371   | .173 | -.451                   | 2.467       |
| [country=2.00]             | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .       | .    | .                       | .           |

a. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

We see that now only the data from Greece and Italy are compared. From the Parameter Estimates table, we see that country 2 is the reference category, which is Italy. We also see that the average height in Greece is 1.008 cm taller

than Italy. This effect is not significant,  $t(98) = 1.371, p = 0.17$ . We use 98 degrees of freedom because we have 100 people and lose 2 degrees of freedom, one for the intercept and once for the regression coefficient for country=1. Note that this number is also indicated in the Tests of Between-Subjects Effects table, as the df of the Error.

So what is different from the contrast effect? First of all, we see that the  $p$ -value is different: the  $p$ -value for the contrast effect analysis is somewhat larger than the one for the 'ordinary'  $t$ -test. Second, we see that the  $t$ -statistic is different: In the contrast analysis the  $t$ -value was 2.96 and in the ordinary analysis it was 1.371. So part of the reason that the  $p$ -value is different for the contrast is that the  $t$ -value is higher. Third, we see that the degrees of freedom has changed from 147 to 98. Well, we know that the significance level of a  $t$ -value depends on its size, the higher the  $t$ -value the lower the  $p$ -value, and we know that significance also depends on the degrees of freedom: the more degrees of freedom, the lower the  $p$ -value.

So why has the  $t$ -value changed? Well, we know that the  $t$ -value is nothing but the regression coefficient divided by its standard error,  $t = B/SE$ . If we compare the two outputs, we see that the effect of  $B$  is the same, the regression coefficient is equal to 1.008, and the contrast estimate in the Contrast Results (K-Matrix) is 1.008. So the sizes are the same.

So the only difference between the two analyses can be the standard error. It turns out the standard error is computed in different ways: in the first contrast analysis, this SE is computed on the basis of *all* the data, including the Norway data (150 people). We can see that from the degrees of freedom, the number of people minus 3. Why three? Because we also compute the variance of the Norway data, for which we have to estimate the mean (variance is the average squared difference from the mean). In the second analysis, we only used the data from 100 Greeks and Italians. The Norway data was not used at all, that's why the degrees of freedom is different and also the standard error for our  $t$ -statistic.

Thus in summary: if we have a very specific hypothesis about the difference in means among two groups, it's better to use a contrast analysis, rather than a simple analysis regarding only those two groups. The reason for this is that *more information is used*, even from groups for which we have no specific hypothesis.

Note that here we saw a higher  $p$ -value for the contrast analysis, but still, in general it is wiser to use as much data as possible, so we prefer a contrast analysis over a simple analysis excluding other groups.

The above example of comparing only the means of two groups, at the same time making use of the data in other groups, is called a *simple contrast*. Now let's look at a *complex contrast*. Suppose your hypothesis is that average height is different in Northern-European countries than in Southern-European countries, then you would like to know whether Italy AND Greece taken together differ regarding the average height from Norway. So we'd like to compare the

average height in Norway to the average height in Greece and Italy together. We could write that null-hypothesis as follows:

$$H_0 : \frac{\mu_{Greece} + \mu_{Italy}}{2} = \mu_{Norway} \quad (9.1)$$

In other words, the mean height in Norway is equal to the *average* mean height in the two other countries. If we want to test this hypothesis, we have to define a contrast. So we get the zero on the right-hand side in the following way:

$$\gamma_2 : \frac{\mu_{Greece} + \mu_{Italy}}{2} - \mu_{Norway} = 0 \quad (9.2)$$

This in turn we can write as

$$\gamma_2 : 0.5\mu_{Greece} + 0.5\mu_{Italy} - 1\mu_{Norway} = 0 \quad (9.3)$$

In SPSS, we can code this in the following way  $(\frac{1}{2}\frac{1}{2} - 1)^1$ . We use the following syntax:

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=SPECIAL(0.5 0.5 -1).
```

Now let's compare this analysis where we use a dummy variable `NrthrnEr`, where we code 1s for Norwegians and 0s for Greeks and Italians. We then run an ordinary linear model on the data using this dummy that is a quantitative predictor of height:

```
UNIANOVA height WITH NrthrnEr
/PRINT=PARAMETER
/DESIGN=NrthrnEr.
```

From the contrast analysis we obtain  $F(1, 147) = 10.56, MSE = 14.77, p = 0.001$ , which is equivalent to  $t(147) = 3.25, p = 0.001$ . From the dummy variable analysis, we obtain  $t(148) = 3.24, p = 0.001$ . So in this case, the results are very close: the degrees of freedom is larger for the dummy variable analysis, but the  $t$ -value is lower. All in all, we gain nothing much, and that is because in the dummy analysis we also use all of the data: we put the Greeks and Italians in one group ( $N=100$ ), and the Norwegians in another group ( $N=50$ ). The degrees of freedom therefore differs cause we only need to estimate 2 means in the dummy analysis, instead of 3 in the contrast analysis.

---

<sup>1</sup>Note that for the SPSS variable `country` variable, the first group is Greece, the second is Italy and the third is Norway. The contrast code should reflect the same order.

In general: if you run a model where you compare various groups, AND you have very specific hypotheses that you'd like to test, it is generally advised to run a contrast analysis, including a small number of them, and then report only the tests and  $p$ -values of those contrast. Do not then also report the  $p$ -values of the parameters of your model. Actually, your contrasts are a respecification of your model: either report the contrasts or the parameters, but not both, since they contain the same information. If you report too many  $p$ -values, the probability that you make a Type I error (concluding that you have a significant difference while there is really no difference) becomes too large. That is also the reason why you should report not more contrasts than the number of your parameters for your variable. For example, if you compare 5 groups, you will have 4 parameters for these groups. In that case specify no more than 4 contrasts. SPSS has a number of prespecified sets of contrasts, like Helmert, Deviation, Difference, etcetera. Check out the SPSS manual for more details. If you want something more specific, use the SPECIAL option as indicated above.

Also very important: only go for contrasts when the overall ANOVA is significant. If the group means are not significantly different from each other in a general sense, it is generally not advised to test specific contrasts.

## 9.0.2 Testing more than one contrast

In some cases you have a number of research hypotheses about group differences. For instance, you might have the a priori hypothesis that people in Northern countries are taller than in Southern countries, and another a priori hypothesis that people in Western countries are taller than in Eastern countries. So, a priori you have the hypothesis that the mean height in Norway is different from the mean heights in Greece and Italy combined. Second, you expect that the mean height in Italy is higher than in Greece.

You could test these two hypotheses at once in SPSS by specifying a  $K$  matrix, like so:

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=SPECIAL(-0.5  -0.5  1
                             1      -1  0).
```

Remember that the countries were coded like 1=Greece, 2=Italy, and 3=Norway. So the first null-hypothesis that is tested is that Norway has the same mean as the average of Greece and Italy. The second null-hypothesis is that Greece and Italy have the same mean.

This set of contrasts is said to be *orthogonal*: whether or not we find a significant result for the first contrast has nothing to do with whether we find a significant result for the second contrast. Why this is the case can be seen from the  $K$  matrix: if we take the first elements of the first and second row and multiply them we get  $-0.5 \times 1 = -0.5$ . If we take the second elements of the first and second row and multiply them we get  $-0.5 \times -1 = 0.5$ . If we



take the third elements of the first and second row and multiply them we get  $1 \times 0 = 0$ . If we add these numbers we get  $-0.5 + 0.5 + 0 = 0$ . Here we get a total of 0, which indicates that the contrasts are orthogonal, implying that the statistical results for contrast 1 and 2 are independent of each other. If the sum is unequal to 0, the contrasts are said to be *dependent*. Here's an example of a non-orthogonal set of contrasts:

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=SPECIAL( 1    0   -1
                             1   -1    0).
```

Here the sum of the products equals  $1 \times 1 + 0 \times -1 + -1 \times 0 = 1$ . This means that the set of statistical results is not independent of each other, so if the null-hypothesis if the first contrast is significant, this yields some information about the probability of obtaining a significant result for the second contrast. This you do not want, of course. So generally you would want to use independent sets of contrast. However, research questions are always more important: if you have good theoretical reason to specify a set of non-orthogonal contrast, just go for it (Stevens, ).

As stated earlier, SPSS has a number of pre-specified sets of contrasts. One of them is the Helmert set of contrasts. In Helmert contrasts, the first group is contrasted with the average of all later groups, the second group is compared to the average of the later groups (ignoring group 1), the third group is compared with the average of the later groups (ignoring groups 1 and 2), etcetera. For a five country analysis, the syntax would be like

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=SPECIAL(1    -0.25 -0.25 -0.25 -0.25
                           0 1 -0.33 -0.33 -0.33
                           0 0 1 -0.5 -0.5
                           0 0 0 1 -1).
```

and this is equivalent to the syntax

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=HELMERT.
```

This set of 4 contrasts is also completely orthogonal: all pairs of contrasts are orthogonal.

### 9.0.3 Post-hoc comparisons

In some cases, you compare 3 or more groups, and you find some interesting differences. For instance, in the above example, when you look at the boxplot

of the differences between Greece, Italy and Norway, you might wonder whether there is a real difference in Italy and Greece. Or perhaps there is a difference between Norway and Italy, or even between Norway and Greece. There might be all kinds of interesting things to find out from these data. In this case note, we now formulate these hypotheses *after* looking at the difference in our data. In this case, suppose that there was no specific hypothesis before collecting our data, and we merely wanted to find out whether there are differences between mean heights across these countries. So, our null-hypothesis before looking at the data was that there were no differences in mean height across Greek, Italian and Norwegian populations. To test this we perform a regular linear model analysis, with height as the dependent variable and a categorical variable country as independent variable. We want SPSS to make dummy variables automatically, so we use the following syntax using BY:

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/PRINT=PARAMETER
/DESIGN=country.
```

| Source          | Type III Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F          | Sig. |
|-----------------|-------------------------|-----|-------------|------------|------|
| Corrected Model | 181.382 <sup>a</sup>    | 2   | 90.691      | 6.142      | .003 |
| Intercept       | 4097387.37              | 1   | 4097387.37  | 277508.194 | .000 |
| country         | 181.382                 | 2   | 90.691      | 6.142      | .003 |
| Error           | 2170.444                | 147 | 14.765      |            |      |
| Total           | 4099739.20              | 150 |             |            |      |
| Corrected Total | 2351.826                | 149 |             |            |      |

a. R Squared = .077 (Adjusted R Squared = .065)

From the output we use the  $F$ -test to test the overall hypothesis about equality of means, and report a significant difference between the three means,  $F(2, 147) = 6.14$ ,  $MSE = 14.77$ ,  $p < 0.05$ . Now *given* that we have this rejection of the null-hypothesis, we might be very interested where this significance comes from: is it that Norway is very different from the other two countries? Perhaps there are no differences between Greece and Italy? Perhaps there is only a real difference between Norway and Italy, but no real difference between Greece and Italy. And so on, and so forth. Note that here you could make 3 pair-wise simple comparisons: Greece vs Italy, Greece vs Norway and Italy vs Norway. You or anyone else intested in your research would like to know if these pair-wise differences are significant. In that case you can report so-called *post hoc* pairwise comparisons.

Note that we do not perform planned comparisons using contrasts here. Planned comparisons are very powerful tools that are only allowed for hypotheses that are specified *a priori*, that is, *before* doing any analysis, and preferably before any data collection. *Post hoc* comparisons are done *after* the fact: after testing the research hypothesis and after having looked at the data (seeing means or boxplots!), you can test extra hypotheses that are of secondary interest. First we will show you how to do it, and second we will explain why we do it like that.

```
UNIANOVA height BY country
/PRINT=PARAMETER
/DESIGN=country
/POSTHOC=country(BONFERRONI) .
```

So we state that we wish to see posthoc comparisons for the variable *country*. In parentheses we indicate *Bonferroni*, which we will explain later.

| (I) country | (J) country | Mean Difference (I-J) | Std. Error | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |        |
|-------------|-------------|-----------------------|------------|------|-------------------------|--------|
| Greece      | Italy       | 1.0081                | .76850     | .575 | -.8530                  | 2.8692 |
|             | Norway      | -1.6591               | .76850     | .097 | -3.5202                 | .2020  |
| Italy       | Greece      | -1.0081               | .76850     | .575 | -2.8692                 | .8530  |
|             | Norway      | -2.6672*              | .76850     | .002 | -4.5283                 | -.8061 |
| Norway      | Greece      | 1.6591                | .76850     | .097 | -.2020                  | 3.5202 |
|             | Italy       | 2.6672*               | .76850     | .002 | .8061                   | 4.5283 |

Based on observed means.  
The error term is Mean Square(Error) = 14.765.  
\*. The mean difference is significant at the 0

From the figure we see that there are 6 comparisons, but by closer inspection we see that all three possible comparisons are reported twice. We see a significant difference between Italy and Norway,  $p < 0.002$ , and that the other two comparisons are not significant. So average height in Greece is not different from the average height in Italy,  $p > 0.575$ , nor from that in Norway,  $p > 0.097$ . Now note the difference from the Planned comparisons analysis. There we found a  $p$ -value of 0.19 for the hypothesis that Greece has the same average height as Italy. This contrast had a somewhat higher  $p$ -value than a simple dummy analysis for Greece and Italy, ignoring the Norwegian data,  $p = 0.17$ . And now we see a much higher  $p$ -value of 0.58. The reason is that a correction has been applied to the  $p$ -values. This correction is needed because otherwise we too easily conclude that there are true differences between Greece and Italy.

Remember that the probability of a Type I error is very often chosen to be 5%. If we have one null-hypothesis that we want to test, the probability that we incorrectly conclude that there *is* a difference in means (but there is really *no* difference at population level!) is 5%. But suppose we have 10 hypotheses that we wish to test. Then what is the probability of finding at least 1 significant result while there is no difference? Well, it could be that our first hypothesis is falsely rejected, or our second, or our third, or perhaps even both our second and fourth hypothesis, and so on and so forth. With 10 hypotheses to test, there will be a high probability that *at least* 1 will be falsely rejected. If *each* hypothesis has a probability of a Type I error of 5%, the probability that none of the hypotheses is falsely rejected equals  $0.95^{10} = 0.60$  (if we assume that all probabilities are independent). So the probability that at least one is falsely rejected is the complement of that, so 0.40. If we carry out such research with 10 hypotheses, each using a significance level of 5%, we actually have a probability of 40% of making at least one Type I error! That is awful, we don't want that. That's why in research, with a lot of hypotheses to be tested, we generally adjust the  $p$ -value in order to be more careful rejecting null-hypotheses. Theoretically,

the  $p$ -value of our posthoc comparison of Greece and Italy should be equal to 0.19, corresponding to the simple dummy variable analysis ignoring Norway, but we report 0.575, because we also test two other hypotheses here. Actually, the  $p$ -value of the simple analysis of 0.19 is multiplied by the total number of tests, which is 3.

#### 9.0.4 Posthoc tests for complex contrasts

#### 9.0.5 Fishing expeditions

The practice of testing a lot of hypotheses is often described as a fishing expedition. Just set out with large nets, throw them out, and catch whatever you can. In some extreme cases, in genetics for example, researchers test thousands or even millions of hypotheses on the basis of only one data set. Imagine that you collect height data on 70 countries and you want to know what countries differ from what other countries. The total number of pairs of countries equals  $70 \text{ over } 2$ , which is equal to 2415. So with 2415  $p$ -values, what is the a priori probability of a significant result? If in reality there ARE no differences in means, and a fixed significance level of 0.05, 5% of the  $p$ -values will be significant! So with such a data set, there will be at least  $0.05 \times 2415 = 121$  significant  $p$ -values. At least, because there might be some true ones too. So in that scenario, it is impossible to know which  $p$ -values are too be trusted: many of them will involve false rejections.

For this reason, always be very specific about the null-hypothesis that you want to test with your data. If you have a very specific hypothesis about the differences in means, following a specific pattern, then always use a planned contrasts analysis. If after your analysis, there are some secondary hypotheses that you'd like to check (but for which you had no specific expectation) then report posthoc tests. The Bonferroni post hoc test is a good choice, as it is very conservative: it is very unlikely that you will falsely reject a hypothesis. Alternatively, there are some other post hoc tests, for further reading see the SPSS manual.

In general do a contrast analysis (planned comparisons) if:

- the overall test for the equality of all means is significant
- the comparisons are chosen *before* looking at the results (means, plots, statistical tests): they should be planned ahead!
- the number of planned contrasts should not exceed the degrees of freedom, that is, the number of groups minus 1.

Otherwise, do posthoc analyses, or better still, perform as few tests as possible! Only do posthoc tests if you are in an exploratory mood (you're not having a specific hypothesis but you would like to get some new ideas for future research) or when your supervisor asks for them.

## Exercises

You compare 4 groups. You'd like to know whether the averages observed in groups 1 and 2 differ from the averages observed in groups 3 and 4.

- State the null hypothesis
- Define the contrast
- Provide the SPSS syntax for this contrast

answers:

- $H_0 : \frac{\mu_1 + \mu_2}{2} - \frac{\mu_3 + \mu_4}{2} = 0$
- (0.5 0.5 -0.5 -0.5)
- ```
UNIANOVA height BY group
/DESIGN=country
/CONTRAST(country)=SPECIAL(0.5 0.5 -0.5 -0.5).
```

You compare 5 groups. You'd like to know whether the average observed in group 1 differs from the averages observed in groups 3, 4 and 5.

- State the null hypothesis
- Define the contrast
- Provide the SPSS syntax for this contrast

answers:

- $H_0 : \frac{\mu_1}{1} - \frac{\mu_3 + \mu_4 + \mu_5}{3} = 0$
- (1 0 -0.33 -0.33 -0.33)
- ```
UNIANOVA height BY group
/DESIGN=group
/CONTRAST(group)=SPECIAL((1 0 -0.33 -0.33 -0.33)).
```

A student has run the following SPSS syntax:

```
UNIANOVA score BY school
/DESIGN=school
/CONTRAST(school)=SPECIAL((0 0 1 -0.5 -0.5)).
```

What null-hypothesis is tested using this syntax?

answer: The hypothesis that the average score in school 3 is the same as the mean average score in schools 4 and 5 or  $H_0 : \mu_3 = \frac{\mu_4 + \mu_5}{2}$

A student has tested the research hypothesis that height is different in the

Benelux countries: The Netherlands, Belgium and Luxemburg, and finds a significant result. His supervisor asks then where the differences come from: is it that height is different in the Netherlands, or is it perhaps Luxemburg that deviates from the other two countries? She would like to have more specific information where the differences are between these three countries. What would you advise this student to do?

answer: the supervisor does not seem to have any clearcut hypothesis about height differences in the Benelux countries. You therefore advise to carry a number of posthoc tests, that take into account the increase in the probability of a Type I error by adjusting p-values.

A student has tested the research hypothesis that height is different in the Benelux countries: The Netherlands, Belgium and Luxemburg, and finds a significant result. His supervisor then says that the student is not finished yet. She would like to know whether the theory is correct that the larger the country, the taller the people. She would therefore like to know whether the average height in small country Luxemburg is different from the height averages in Belgium and The Netherlands.

answer: the supervisor has a clearcut hypothesis about height differences in the Benelux countries. You therefore advise to carry out a planned comparison (a contrast analysis), that specifically tests the null hypothesis that the average in Luxemburg is the same as the mean average of Belgium and the Netherlands together.

## Chapter 10

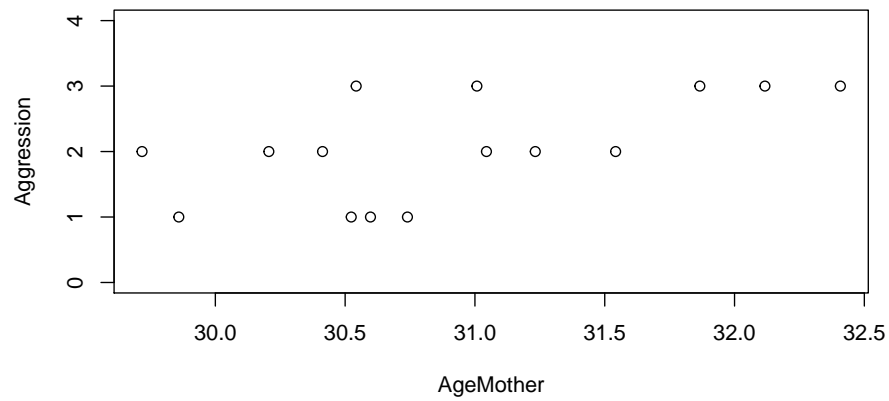
# When assumptions are not met: non-parametric alternatives

Linear models do not apply to every data set. As discussed before, sometimes the assumptions of linear modelling are not met. One of the assumptions is linearity or additivity. Additivity requires that one unit change in variable X leads to the same amount of change in Y, no matter what value X has. For bivariate relationships this leads to a linear shape. But sometimes you can only expect that Y will change in the same direction, but you don't believe that this amount is the same for all values of X. This is the case for example with ordinal dependent variable. Suppose we wish to model the relationship between age of the mother and an aggression score of her 7-year-old child. Suppose aggression is measured on a three-point ordinal scale: not aggressive, sometimes aggressive, often aggressive. Since we do not know the quantitative differences between these three levels there are many graphs we could draw for a given data set.

Suppose we have the following data set:

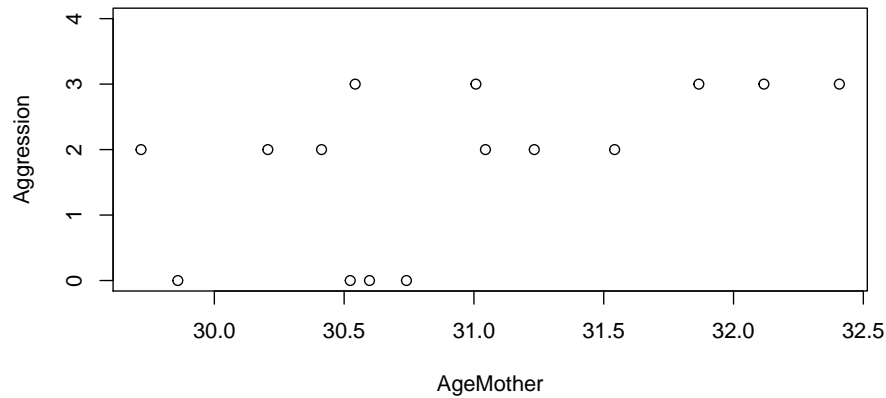
| AgeMother | Aggression           |
|-----------|----------------------|
| 32        | Sometimes aggressive |
| 31        | Often aggressive     |
| 32        | Often aggressive     |
| 30        | Not aggressive       |
| 31        | Sometimes aggressive |
| 30        | Sometimes aggressive |
| 31        | Not aggressive       |
| 31        | Often aggressive     |
| 31        | Not aggressive       |
| 30        | Sometimes aggressive |
| 32        | Often aggressive     |
| 32        | Often aggressive     |
| 31        | Sometimes aggressive |
| 30        | Sometimes aggressive |
| 31        | Not aggressive       |

If we want to make a scatter plot, we could choose the values 1, 2, and 3 for the three categories respectively. We would then get the following plot:



But since the Aggression data are ordinal, we could also choose values 0, 2, and 3:





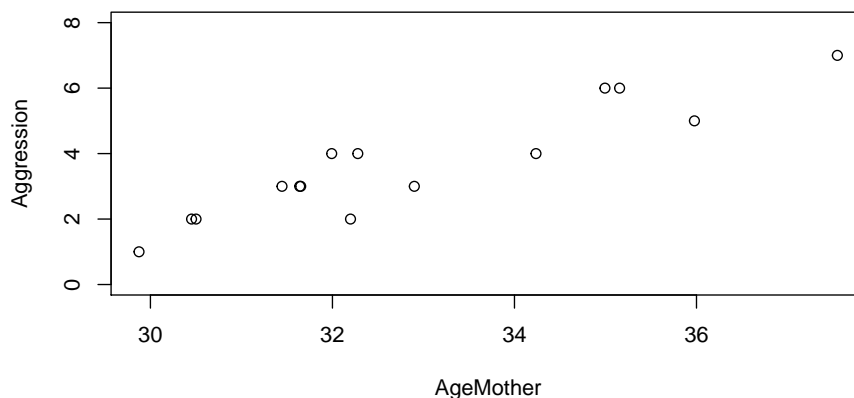
As we change the scale for the ordinal variable, we also see the best fitting regression line changing.

So with ordinal data, the assumption of additivity is often not met, since the values for a quantitative analysis are arbitrarily chosen.

In some case though, ordinal data could be modelled linearly. Look at the following example where we measured aggression with a 7-point Likert scale:

| AgeMother | Aggression |
|-----------|------------|
| 35        | 6          |
| 32        | 4          |
| 35        | 6          |
| 36        | 5          |
| 33        | 3          |
| 30        | 1          |
| 32        | 4          |
| 32        | 2          |
| 34        | 4          |
| 30        | 2          |
| 32        | 3          |
| 31        | 2          |
| 32        | 3          |
| 31        | 3          |
| 38        | 7          |

When we plot these data, using the values 1 through 7, we see a nice linear relationship. So even when the values are arbitrarily chosen, a linear model can be a good model for a given data set with ordinal variables.

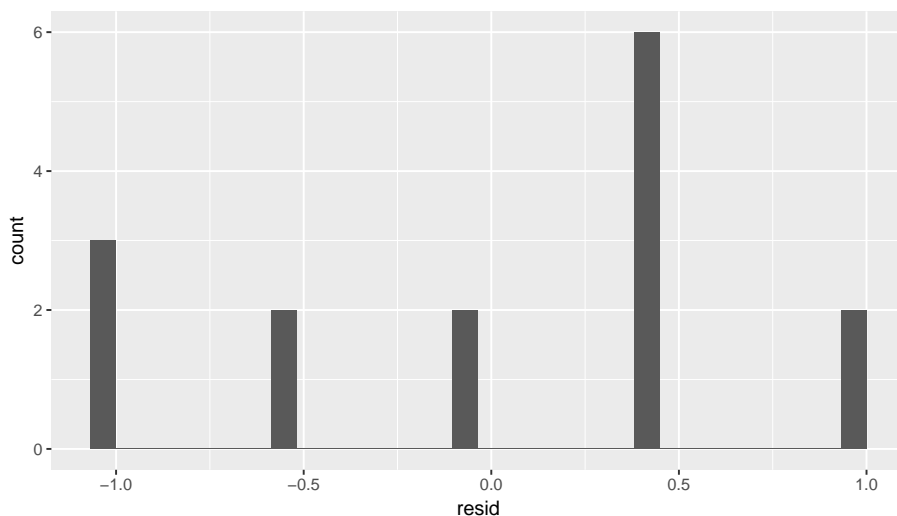


So with ordinal data, always check that your data indeed conform to a linear model, but realize at the same time that you're assuming a quantitative relationship between the variables that may or may not make sense.

If you believe that a quantitative analysis is meaningless then consider non-parametric analysis.

Another case where we favour a nonparameteric analysis, is when the assumption of normally distributed residuals is not tenable. For instance look again at Figure ???. When we perform a regression analysis and plot a histogram of the residuals, we see the following:

```
## 'stat_bin()' using 'bins = 30'. Pick better value with 'binwidth'.
```



Everytime we see a distribution of residuals that is either very skew, or has

very few different values, we should consider a nonparametric analysis. Note that the shape of the distribution of the residuals is directly related to what scale values we choose for the ordinal categories. By changing the values we change the regression line, and that directly affects the relative sizes of the residuals.

First, we will discuss a nonparametric alternative for two quantitative variables. We will start with Spearman's rho, or Spearman's rank-order correlation coefficient  $r_s$ . Next we will discuss an alternative to  $r_s$ , Kendall's T. After that we will discuss categorical variables, when comparing group differences.

## 10.1 Spearman's rho

Suppose we have 10 students and we ask their teachers to rate them. One teachers rates them on geography and the other teachers on history. We only ask to give rankings: indicate the brightest student with a 1 and the dullest student with a 10. Then we might have the following data set:

| rank.geography | rank.history |
|----------------|--------------|
| 5              | 4            |
| 4              | 5            |
| 6              | 7            |
| 7              | 8            |
| 8              | 6            |
| 9              | 9            |
| 10             | 10           |
| 2              | 3            |
| 1              | 1            |
| 3              | 2            |

Now we acknowledge the ordinal nature of the data: we only have rankings: a person with rank 1 is brighter than a person with rank 2, but we do not how large the difference in brightness really is. Now we want to establish whether there is a relationship between rankings on geography and the rankings on history: is it true that the higher the ranking on geography, the higher the ranking on history?

By eyeballing the data, we see that the brightest student in geography is also the brightest student in history (rank 1). We also see that the dullest student in history is the dullest student in geography (rank 10). Furthermore, we see relatively small differences between the rankings on the two subjects: high rankings on geography seem to go together with high rankings on history. Let's look at these differences between rankings more closely by computing them:

| rank.geography | rank.history | difference |
|----------------|--------------|------------|
| 5              | 4            | -1         |
| 4              | 5            | 1          |
| 6              | 7            | 1          |
| 7              | 8            | 1          |
| 8              | 6            | -2         |
| 9              | 9            | 0          |
| 10             | 10           | 0          |
| 2              | 3            | 1          |
| 1              | 1            | 0          |
| 3              | 2            | -1         |

So theoretically the difference could be as large as 9, but here we see a biggest difference of -2. So the average difference is the sum of these differences, divided by 10, so we get 0. This is because we plus and minus values. If we would take the square of the differences, we would get positive values:

| rank.geography | rank.history | difference | squared.difference |
|----------------|--------------|------------|--------------------|
| 5              | 4            | -1         | 1                  |
| 4              | 5            | 1          | 1                  |
| 6              | 7            | 1          | 1                  |
| 7              | 8            | 1          | 1                  |
| 8              | 6            | -2         | 4                  |
| 9              | 9            | 0          | 0                  |
| 10             | 10           | 0          | 0                  |
| 2              | 3            | 1          | 1                  |
| 1              | 1            | 0          | 0                  |
| 3              | 2            | -1         | 1                  |

Now we can compute the average squared difference, which is equal to  $10/10 = 1$ . Generally, the smaller this value, the closer the rankings are together, and the more correlation there is between the two subjects.

A clever mathematician like Spearman has shown that is even better to use a somewhat different measure for a correlation between ranks. He showed that it is wiser to compute the following statistic:

$$r_s = 1 - \frac{6 \sum d^2}{N^3 - N} \quad (10.1)$$

because then you get a value between -1 and 1, just like a Pearson correlation. So in this case the sum of the squared difference is equal to 10, N is the number of students, so we get:

$$r_s = 1 - \frac{6 \times 10}{10^3 - 10} = 1 - 60/990 = 0.94 \quad (10.2)$$

This is called the Spearman rank-order correlation coefficient  $r_s$ . It can be used for any two variables of which one is at most ordinal. The trick is to convert

the scale values into ranks, and then apply the formula above. For instance, if we have the variable Grade with the following values (C, B, D, A, F), we convert them into rankings by saying the A is the highest value (1), B is the second highest value (2), C is the third highest value (3), D is the fourth highest value (4) and F is the fifth highest value (5). So tranformed into rankings we get (3, 2, 4, 1, 5). We can also let SPSS do the computations for us. Suppose we have two variables shoe size and aggression, we use the syntax:

```
NONPAR CORR
  /VARIABLES=shoesize aggression
  /PRINT=SPEARMAN .
```

In the output you will see a correlation matrix very similar the one for a Pearson correlation. Spearman's rho is equal to the  $r_2$  mentioned above. You will also see whether the correlation is significantly different from 0, indicated by a  $p$ -value. If the  $p$ -value is very small, you may concluded that on the basis of these data, the correlation in the population is not equal to 0, ergo, in the population there is a relationship between shoe size and aggression.

Below we discuss an alternative measure for a correlation for ordinal data, the Kendall rank-order correlation coefficient  $T$ .

## 10.2 Kendall rank-order correlation coefficient $T$

If you want to know if there is a relationship between two variables, of which one is at most ordinal, you can either use Spearman's rho or Kendall's T. However, if you have three variables, and you want to know whether there is a relationship between A and B, over and above the effect of C, you can use a extension of Kendall's T. Note that this is very similar to multiple regression: a coefficient for variable  $X_1$  in multiple regression with two predictors is the effect of  $X_1$  on Y over and above the effect of  $X_2$  on Y. The logic of Kendall's T is also based on rank orderings, but it involves a different computation. Let's look at the student data again with the teacher's rankings of the students on two subjects:

| student | rank.geography | rank.history |
|---------|----------------|--------------|
| 1       | 5              | 4            |
| 2       | 4              | 5            |
| 3       | 6              | 7            |
| 4       | 7              | 8            |
| 5       | 8              | 6            |
| 6       | 9              | 9            |
| 7       | 10             | 10           |
| 8       | 2              | 3            |
| 9       | 1              | 1            |
| 10      | 3              | 2            |

First we put the students in a new order, such that the brightest student in geography comes first, and the dullest last. This also changes the order in the

|                   |         |                |              |
|-------------------|---------|----------------|--------------|
|                   | student | rank.geography | rank.history |
|                   | 9       | 1              | 1            |
|                   | 8       | 2              | 3            |
|                   | 10      | 3              | 2            |
|                   | 2       | 4              | 5            |
| variable history: | 1       | 5              | 4            |
|                   | 3       | 6              | 7            |
|                   | 4       | 7              | 8            |
|                   | 5       | 8              | 6            |
|                   | 6       | 9              | 9            |
|                   | 7       | 10             | 10           |

From this we see that the history teacher agrees with the geography teacher that student 9 is brighter than student 8. They also agree that student 9 is brighter than student 10. If we do this for all possible pairs of students, we can count the number of times that they agree and we can count the number of times that they disagree. The total number of possible pairs is equal to  $\binom{10}{2} = 90/2 = 45$ . So for example we might find for a data set on 10 students, that of all 45 pairs, the teachers agree 30 times, and disagree 15 times. Then we can compute Kendall's T as follows:

$$T = \frac{\text{agreements} - \text{disagreements}}{\text{totalnumberofpairs}} = \frac{30 - 15}{45} = 0.33 \quad (10.3)$$

This T statistic varies between -1 and 1 and can therefore be seen as a nonparametric analog of a Pearson correlation. Here, the teachers more often agree than disagree, so the correlation is positive. A negative correlation means that the teachers more often disagree than agree on the relative brightness of their students.

The computations are quite involving so we're very lucky that SPSS can do the tedious job for us, with the following syntax:

```
NONPAR CORR
/VARIABLES=shoesize aggression
/PRINT=KENDALL .
```

As said, the advantage of Kendall's T over Spearman's r is that Kendall's T can be extended to cover the case that you wish to establish the strength of the relationships of two variables A and B, over and above the relationship with C.

Now that we have discussed relationships between quantitative variables, let's have a look at the case where we have categorical variables.

### 10.3 Kruskal-Wallis test for group comparisons

Suppose we have three groups of students that go on a field trip together: mathematicians, psychologists and engineers. Each can pick a rain coat, with five possible sizes: extra small, small, medium, large or extra large. We want to know if preferred size is different in the three populations, so that we can be better prepared in the future. Now we have information about size, but this knowledge is not quantitative: we do not know the difference in size between medium and large, only that large is larger than medium. We have ordinal data, so computing a mean is impossible here. Even we would assign values like 1= extra small, 2=small, 3= medium, etcetera, the mean would be rather meaningless as these values are arbitrary. So instead of focussing on means, we can focus on medians: the middle value. For instance, the median value for our sample of mathematicians could be medium, for our sample of psychologists small, and for our sample of engineers large. Our question might then be whether the median values in the populations are really different.

This can be assessed using the Kruskal-Wallis test. Similar to Spearman's  $r$  and Kendall's  $T$ , the data are transformed into ranks. This is done for all data at once, so for all students together.

For example, if we had the following data:

| student | group    | size |
|---------|----------|------|
| 001     | math     | xs   |
| 002     | math     | xl   |
| 003     | psych    | m    |
| 004     | psych    | s    |
| 005     | engineer | l    |
| ...     | ...      | ...  |

We would transform it into ranks, from smallest to largest, like this:

| student | group    | size | rank |
|---------|----------|------|------|
| 001     | math     | xs   | 1    |
| 002     | math     | xl   | 5    |
| 003     | psych    | m    | 3    |
| 004     | psych    | s    | 2    |
| 005     | engineer | l    | 4    |
| ...     | ...      | ...  | ...  |

Next, we could compute the average rank per group. The group with the smallest sizes would have the lowest average rank, etcetera. Under the null-hypothesis, if the distribution of size was the same in all three groups, the average ranks would be about the same. If they are very different, this is an indication that size is not distributed equally among the three groups. In order to have a proper statistical test, a rather complex formula is used to compute the so-called KW statistics. We know the distribution of this KW statistic under the null-hypothesis, so we know what extreme values are, and consequently

can compute  $p$ -values. This tedious computation is also done by SPSS using the following syntax.

NPTESTS

```
/INDEPENDENT TEST (size) GROUP (group) KRUSKAL_WALLIS (COMPARE=NONE) .
```

The output gives you a significance level ( $p$ -value) of the test that size is distributed equally among psychology students, engineering students and mathematics students. If it is a very low number, you may conclude that in the population, students in psychology, mathematics in engineering have different preferences regarding the size of their rain coat on field trips.



## Chapter 11

# Linear mixed modelling: introduction

### 11.1 Fixed effects and random effects

In the simplest form of linear modelling, we have one dependent continuous variable, one intercept and one or more independent variables. Let's look at a simple regression equation where dependent variable  $y$  is predicted by an intercept  $b_0$  and a linear effect of independent variable  $x_1$  with regression slope parameter  $b_1$ , and an error term  $e$ , where we assume that the error term  $e$  comes from a normal distribution.

$$y = b_0 + b_1x_1 + e \quad (11.1)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma^2) \quad (11.2)$$

Using this model, we know that for a person with a value of 5 for  $x_1$ , we expect  $y$  to be equal to  $b_0 + b_1 \times 5$ . As another example, if  $y$  is someone's IQ score,  $x_1$  is someone's brain size in cubic milliliters,  $b_0$  is equal to 70, and  $b_1$  is equal to 0.1, we expect on the basis of this model that a person with a brain size of 1500 cubic millimeters has an IQ score of  $70 + 0.01 \times 1500$ , which equals 85.

Now, for any model the predicted values usually are not the same as the observed values. If the model predicts on the basis of my brain size that my IQ is 140, my true IQ might be in fact 130. This discrepancy is termed the residual: the observed  $y$ , minus the predicted  $y$ , or  $\hat{y}$ , so in this case the residual is  $y - \hat{y} = 130 - 140 = -10$ .

Here we have the model for the relationship between IQ and brain size.

$$IQ = 70 + 0.1 \times Brainsize + e \quad (11.3)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma^2) \quad (11.4)$$

Note that in this model, the values of 70 and 0.1 are *fixed*, that is, we use the same intercept and the same slope for everyone. You use these values for any person, for Henry, Jake, Lizz, and Margaret. We therefore call these effects of intercept and slope *fixed effects*, as they are all the same for all research units. In contrast, we call the  $e$  term, the random error term or the residual in the regression, a *random effect*. This is because the error term is *different for every research unit*. We don't know the specific values of these random errors or residuals for every person, but nevertheless, we assume that they come from a distribution, in this case a normal distribution with mean 0 and an unknown variance. This unknown variance is given the symbol  $\sigma^2$ .

Here are a few more examples.

1. Suppose we study a number of schools, and for every school we use a simple linear regression equation to predict the number of students (dependent variable) on the basis of the number of teachers (independent variable). For every research unit (in this case: school), the intercept and the regression slope are the same (fixed effects), but the residuals are different (random effect).
2. Suppose we study a number of students, and for every student we use a simple linear regression equation to predict the math test score on the basis of the number of hours of study the student puts in. Here, the research unit is student, and for every student, the intercept and the regression slope are the same (fixed effects), but the residuals are different (random effect).
3. Suppose we study reaction times, and for every measure of reaction time – a trial – we use a simple linear regression equation to predict reaction time in milliseconds on the basis of the characteristics of the stimulus. Here, the research unit is trial, and for every trial, the intercept and the regression slope are the same (fixed effects), but the residuals are different (random effect).

Now, what happens when we have a lot of data on students, but the students come from different schools? Suppose we want to predict average grade for every student, on the basis of the number of hours of study the student puts in. We again could use a simple linear regression equation.

$$y = b_0 + b_1 \text{hourswork} + e \quad (11.5)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma^2) \quad (11.6)$$

That would be fine if all schools would be all very similar. But suppose that some schools have a lot of high scoring students, and some schools have a lot of low scoring students? Then school itself would also be a very important

predictor, apart from the number of hours of study. One thing we could therefore do is to include school as a categorical predictor. We would then have to code this school variable into a number of dummy variables. The first dummy variable called *school1* would indicate whether students are in the first school (*school1*=1) or not (*school1*=0). The second dummy variable *school2* would indicate whether students are in the second school (*school2*=1) or not (*school2*=0), etcetera. You can then add these dummy variables to the regression equation like this:

$$y = b_0 + b_1 \text{hourswork} + b_2 \text{school1} + b_3 \text{school2} + b_4 \text{school3} + \dots + e$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma^2)$$

In the output we would find a large number of effects, one for each dummy variable. For example, if the students came from 100 different schools, I would get 99 fixed effects for the 99 dummy variables. However, one could wonder whether this is very useful. As stated earlier, fixed effects are called fixed because they are the same for every unit of research, in this case every student. But working with 99 dummy variables, where students mostly score 0, this seems very much over the top. In fact, we're not even interested in these 99 effects. We're interested in the relationship between test score and hours of work, meanwhile taking into account that there are test score differences across schools. The dummy variables are only there to account for differences across schools; the prediction for one school is a little bit higher or lower than for another school, depending on how well students generally perform in each school.

We could therefore try an alternative model, where we treat the school effect as *random*: we assume that every school has a different average test score, and that these averages are normally distributed. We call these average test score deviations *school effects*:

$$y = b_0 + b_1 \text{hourswork} + \text{schooleffect} + e \quad (11.7)$$

$$\text{schooleffect} \sim N(0, \sigma_s^2) \quad (11.8)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (11.9)$$

So in this equation, the intercept is fixed, that is, the intercept is the same for all observed test scores. The regression coefficient  $b_1$  for the effect of hours of work is also fixed. But the schooleffect is random, since it is different for every school. The residual  $e$  is also random, being different for every student. It could also be written like this:

$$y = (b_0 + \text{schooleffect}) + b_1 \text{hourswork} + e \quad (11.10)$$

$$\text{schooleffect} \sim N(0, \sigma_s^2) \quad (11.11)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (11.12)$$

This representation emphasizes that for every school, the intercept is a little bit different: for school A the intercept might be  $b_0 + 2$ , and for school R the intercept might be  $b_0 - 3$ .

So, this equation states that every observed test score is 1) partly influenced by an intercept that is random, with a certain average  $b_0$  and variance  $\sigma_s^2$ , that is dependent on which school students are in, 2) partly influenced by the number of hours of work, an effect that is the same no matter what school a student is in (fixed), and 3) partly influenced by unknown factors, indicated by a random residual  $e$  coming from a normal distribution with variance  $\sigma_e^2$ .

To put it more formally: test score  $y_{ij}$ , that is, the test score from student  $j$  in school  $i$ , is the sum of an effect of the school  $b_0 + \text{schooleffect}_i$  (the average test score in school  $i$ ), plus an effect of hours of work,  $b_1 \times \text{hourswork}$ , and an unknown residual  $e_{ij}$  (a specific residual for the test score for student  $j$  in school  $i$ ).

$$y_{ij} = b_0 + \text{schooleffect}_i + b_1 \text{hourswork} + e_{ij} \quad (11.13)$$

$$\text{schooleffect}_i \sim N(0, \sigma_s^2) \quad (11.14)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (11.15)$$

So in addition to the assumption of residuals that have a normal distribution with mean 0 and variance  $\sigma_s^2$ , we also have an assumption that the school averages are normally distributed, in this case with mean  $b_0$  and variance  $\sigma_s^2$ .

Let's go back to the example of reaction times. Suppose in an experiment we measure reaction time in a large number of trials. We want to know whether the size of the stimulus (large/small) has an effect on reaction time. Let's also suppose that we carry out this experiment with 20 participants, where every participant is measured during 100 trials: 50 large stimuli and 50 small stimuli in random order. Now probably, some participants show generally very fast responses, and some participants show generally very slow responses. In other words, the average reaction time for the 100 trials may vary from participant to participant. This means that we can use participant as an important predictor of reaction times. To take this into account we can use the following equation:

$$y_{ij} = b_0 + \text{speed}_i + b_1 \text{size} + e_{ij} \quad (11.16)$$

$$\text{speed}_i \sim N(0, \sigma_s^2) \quad (11.17)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2), \quad (11.18)$$

where  $y_{ij}$  is the reaction time  $j$  from participant  $i$ ,  $(b_0 + \text{speed}_i)$  is a random effect representing the average speed for each participant  $i$  (where  $b_0$  is the overall average across all participants),  $b_1$  is the fixed effect of the size of the stimulus, and unknown residual  $e_{ij}$  is a specific residual for the reaction time for trial  $j$  of participant  $i$ .

The reason for introducing random effects is that when your observed data are clustered, for instance student scores clustered within schools, or trial response times are clustered within participants, you violate the assumption of independence: two reaction times from the same person are more similar than two reaction times from different persons. Two test scores from students from the same school may be more similar than two scores from students in different schools. When this is the case, when data are clustered, it is very important to take this into account. When the assumption of independence is violated, you are making wrong inference if you only use a simple linear model. With clustered data, it is therefore necessary to work with an extension of the linear model, the so-called linear mixed model. The above models for test scores across different schools and reaction times across different participants, are examples of *linear mixed models*. The term *mixed* comes from the fact that the models contain a mix of both fixed and random effects.

If you have clustered data, you should take this clustering into account, either by using the grouping variable as a qualitative predictor (using a number of dummy variables) or by using a linear mixed model. As a rule of thumb: if you have fewer than 10 groups, consider dummy variables; if you have 10 or more groups, consider a linear mixed model. Use a linear mixed model if the assumption of normally distributed group differences is tenable. Use dummy variables if you are actually interested in the size of group differences.

Below, we will start with a very simple example of linear mixed model, one that we use for a simple pre-post intervention design.

## 11.2 Pre-post intervention design

Imagine a study where we hope to show that aspirin helps reduce headache. For 100 patients we ask to rate the severity of their headache before they use aspirin (on a scale from 1 - 100), and to rate the severity again 3 hours after taking 500 mg of aspirin. These patients were randomly selected among people who read the NY Times and suffer from regular headaches. So here we have clustered data: we have 100 patients, and for each patient we have two scores, one before (pre) and one after (post) the intervention of taking aspirin. Of course headaches differ from person to person, so we might have to take into account that some patients have a higher average level of headache than other patients. Now, the data could be represented in different ways, but suppose we have the following data matrix (showing only the first 5 patients):

| patient | pre | post |
|---------|-----|------|
| 001     | 55  | 45   |
| 002     | 63  | 50   |
| 003     | 66  | 56   |
| 004     | 50  | 37   |
| 005     | 63  | 50   |
| ...     | ... | ...  |

What we observe here is that the severity seems generally lower after the intervention than before the intervention. But you may also notice that the severity of the headache also varies across patients: some have generally high scores (for instance patient 003), and some have generally low scores (for example patient 001). Therefore, the headache scores seem to be clustered, violating the assumption of independence. We can quantify this clustering by computing a correlation between the pre-intervention scores and the post-intervention scores. Here it appears that there is a strong positive correlation, indicating that the higher the pain score before the intervention, the higher the pain score after the intervention.

There is an alternative way of representing the same data. Let's look at the

| same data in a new format: | patient | measure | headache |
|----------------------------|---------|---------|----------|
|                            | 1       | 1       | 55       |
|                            | 1       | 2       | 45       |
|                            | 2       | 1       | 63       |
|                            | 2       | 2       | 50       |
|                            | 3       | 1       | 66       |
|                            | 3       | 2       | 56       |
|                            | 4       | 1       | 50       |
|                            | 4       | 2       | 37       |
|                            | 5       | 1       | 63       |
|                            | 5       | 2       | 50       |

Here we acknowledge that there is really only one dependent measure: headache severity. The other two variables indicate that this variable varies across both patients and time point (pre intervention and post intervention). Here we might consider applying a simple linear regression model, using severity as the dependent variable and **measure** (1st or 2nd) as a qualitative predictor (using a dummy variable). However, since we know that there is a correlation between the pre and post severity measures, we know that measures systematically vary across patients: some score high on average and some score low on average. Therefore we have to run a linear *mixed* model, including not only the fixed effect of **measure** but also a random effect for each patient. Since we are really interested in the effect of the intervention, that is, we want to know how large the effect of aspirin is, we use a fixed effect for the time effect (the variable **measure**). For the patient effect, because there are so many patients (100) and we're really not interested in all of these individual differences, we use a random

effect. This means that we only assume there is a normal distribution for all of the patient differences. So we get the following equation:

$$y_{ij} = b_0 + patient_i + b_1 measure + e_{ij} \quad (11.19)$$

$$patient_i \sim N(0, \sigma_p^2) \quad (11.20)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (11.21)$$

$y_{ij}$  is the  $j$ th headache severity score (first or second) for patient  $i$ ,  $(b_0 + patient_i)$  is the average headache for patient  $i$ ,  $measure$  is a dummy variable for which measure (first or second), and  $b_1$  is the effect of the intervention (by how much the severity changes from pre to post). We assume that the average pain level for each patient shows a normal distribution with average  $b_0$  and variance  $\sigma_p^2$ . And of course we assume that the residuals show a normal distribution.

This analysis can be done with the following SPSS syntax, treating time as a qualitative variable (using BY) for which SPSS will create a dummy variable automatically.

```
MIXED headache BY measure
/FIXED=measure
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(patient) COVTYPE(VC).
```

**Type III Tests of Fixed Effects**

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 99             | 9494.826 | .000 |
| measure   | 1            | 99.000         | 648.284  | .000 |

**Estimates of Fixed Effects**

| Parameter      | Estimate       | Std. Error | df      | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|----------------|----------------|------------|---------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                |                |            |         |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept      | 49.320000      | .595162    | 124.746 | 82.868 | .000 | 48.142077               | 50.497923   |
| [measure=1.00] | 10.360000      | .406890    | 99.000  | 25.461 | .000 | 9.552642                | 11.167358   |
| [measure=2.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |

b. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

**Estimates of Covariance Parameters**

| Parameter                              | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 8.277980  | 1.176581   |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 27.143838 | 4.485097   |

The most interesting output is given here. We're mostly interested in the fixed effect of the intervention: does aspirin reduce headache? After an F-test,

we see the linear model coefficients, with an intercept of around 49 and a positive effect of the intervention dummy variable, around +10. We see that the dummy variable was coded 0 for the second measure and 1 for first measure. So, for our dependent variable headache, we see that the expected headache severity for the observations with a 0 for the dummy variable (that is, measure 2, which is *after* taking aspirin), is equal to  $49 + (10) \times 0 = 49$ . Similarly, we see that the expected headache severity for the observations with a 1 for the dummy variable (that is, *before* taking aspirin), is equal to  $49 + (10) \times 1 = 49 + 10 = 59$ . So, average pain severity is 10 points higher before the intervention than after the intervention. Whether this difference is significant is indicated by a *t*-test. We see here that the average headache severity after taking an aspirin is significantly different from the average headache severity before taking an aspirin,  $t(99) = 25.46, p < 0.01$ . The degrees of freedom are taken from the Test of Fixed Effects table with the *F*-statistics. Alternatively we can write

The average headache severity after taking an aspirin is significantly different from the average headache severity before taking an aspirin,  $F(1, 99) = 648.28, p < 0.01$

We might therefore carefully conclude that aspirin reduces headache in the population of NY Times readers with headache problems, where the reduction is around 10 points on a 1...100 scale (95% CI: 9.55 – 11.17).

Now, this looks like reporting the output of a regular linear model, but of course it isn't. We also have some extra output, about the random effect of patient. We assumed that the individual differences in headache severity in the 100 patients came from a normal distribution. How large are these individual differences actually? This can be gleaned from the Covariance Parameters part of the SPSS output. We there see two random effects: the one for the residuals and one for the patients. The intercept seems to vary with a variance of 27, which is equivalent to a standard deviation of  $\sqrt{27}$  which is around 5.2. What does that mean exactly? Well let's look at the equation again and fill in the numbers:

$$y_{ij} = b_0 + patient_i + b_1 measure + e_{ij} \quad (11.22)$$

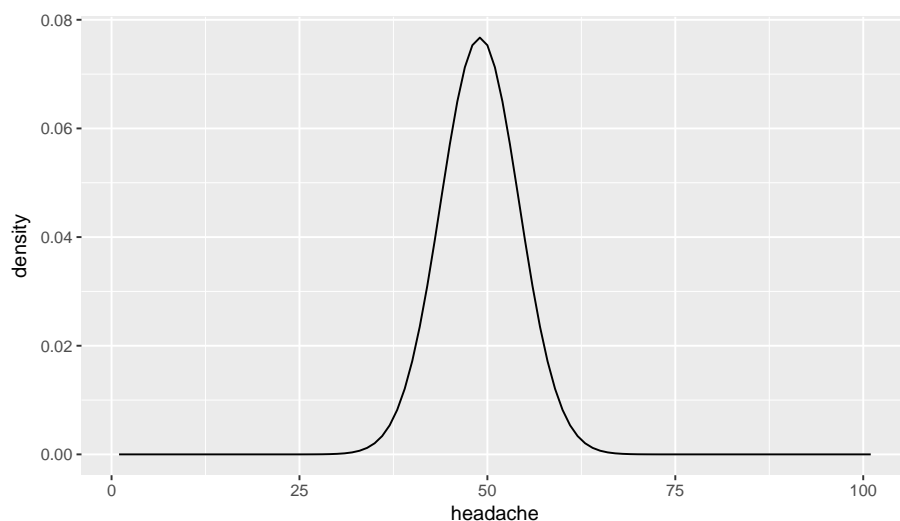
$$y_{ij} = 49 + patient_i + 10measure + e_{ij} \quad (11.23)$$

$$patient_i \sim N(0, 27) \quad (11.24)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, 8) \quad (11.25)$$

Since measure is coded 0 for the headache level after the intervention, we conclude that the average pain level after taking aspirin is 49. However, not everybody's pain level after taking aspirin is 49: people show variance. The pain level after aspirin varies with a variance of 27, which is equivalent to a standard deviation of around 5.2. Figure below shows how much this variance actually is. It depicts a normal distribution with mean 49 and a standard deviation of 5.2.

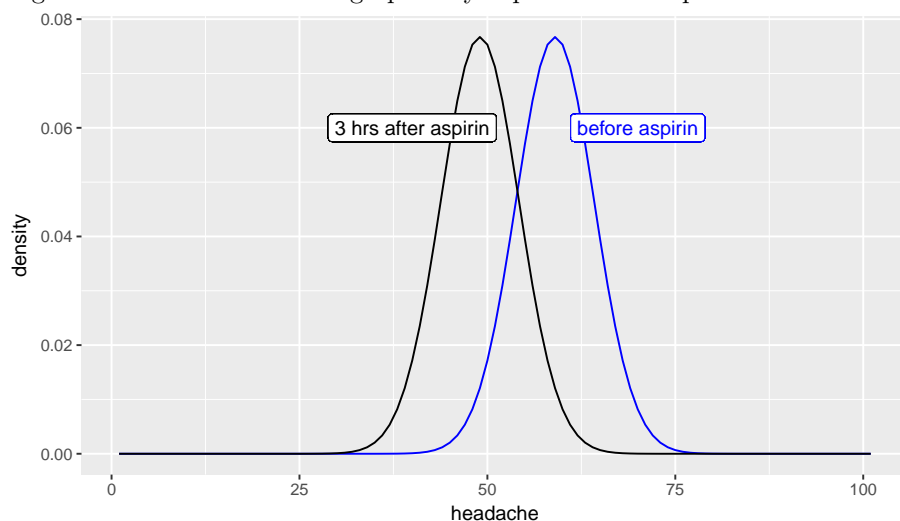




So *after* taking aspirin, most patients show headache levels between 30 and 60. More specifically, if we would take the middle 95% by using plus or minus twice the standard deviation, we can estimate that 95% of the patients shows levels between  $49 - 2 \times 5.2 = 38.6$  and  $49 + 2 \times 5.2 = 59.4$ .

Now let's look at the levels *before* taking aspirin. The average headache level is equal to  $49 + 10 = 59$ . So 95% of the patients shows headache levels between  $59 - 2 \times 5.2 = 48.6$  and  $59 + 2 \times 5.2 = 69.4$  before taking aspirin.

Together these results can be graphically explained in the plot below:



In this plot you see there is variability in headache levels before taking aspirin, and there is variation in headache levels after taking aspirin. We also

see that these distributions have the same spread (variance): in the model we assume that the variability in headache before aspirin is equal to the variability after aspirin. The distributions are equal, except for a horizontal shift: the distribution for headache after aspirin is the same as the distribution before aspirin, except for a shift to the left of about 10 points. This is of course the effect of aspirin in the model, the  $b_1$  parameter in our model above.

The fact that the two distributions before and after aspirin show the same spread (variance) was an inherent assumption in our model: we only have one random effect for patient in our output. If the assumption of equal variance (homoscedasticity) is not tenable, then one should consider other linear mixed models. But this is beyond the scope of this chapter. The assumption can be checked by plotting the residuals, using different colours for residuals from before taking aspirin and for residuals from after taking aspirin.

### 11.2.1 Exercises

Suppose an intervention study looked at the effect of therapy on depression levels. A random sample of patients were measured before and after the therapy. Given the following equation, based on output of the statistical software package R. The dummy variable *measure* was coded 0 for before therapy and 1 for after therapy.

**Type III Tests of Fixed Effects**

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F       | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|---------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 129.673        | 257.700 | .000 |
| measure   | 1            | 99.000         | 31.263  | .000 |

**Estimates of Fixed Effects**

| Parameter | Estimate  | Std. Error | df      | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-----------|-----------|------------|---------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|           |           |            |         |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept | 10.570000 | .658442    | 129.673 | 16.053 | .000 | 9.267319                | 11.872681   |
| measure   | -2.280000 | .407773    | 99.000  | -5.591 | .000 | -3.089110               | -1.470890   |

**Estimates of Covariance Parameters**

| Parameter                              | Estimate | Std. Error |
|--|----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 8.313939 | 1.181692   |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 1.784949 | 1.030708   |

Look at the output below. You see information about random effects and you see information about fixed effects.

- 1. What is the intercept of the model?
- 2. What is the slope coefficient for the measure variable?
- 3. What is the variance of the residuals? What is the standard deviation?
- 4. What is the variance of the individual differences among patients? What is the standard deviation?
- 5. Fill in the values in the linear mixed model below:

$$depression_{ij} = \dots + patient_i + \dots \times measure + e_{ij} \quad (11.26)$$

$$patient_i \sim N(0, \sigma_p^2 = \dots) \quad (11.27)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2 = \dots) \quad (11.28)$$

- 6. what can you say about the average depression level before therapy?
- 7. what can you say about the average depression level after therapy?
- 8. How much variance in depression level before therapy does this model predict? What is the standard deviation?
- 9. Between what values do depression levels before therapy in the middle 95% of patients show?
- 10. How much variance in depression level after therapy does this model predict? What is the standard deviation?
- 11. Between what values do depression levels after therapy in the middle 95% of patients show?
- 12. Does therapy help to alleviate depression in patients? You may use an approximation to construct a confidence interval.
- 13. A researcher has two groups of patients: one group receives medicine and one group receives therapy. The null-hypothesis is that depression levels after medicine are as high as depression levels after therapy. Do we analyse these data with an ordinary linear model, or with a linear mixed model? Explain your answer.

- 14. A researcher studies one group of students: they first get lectures from teacher A and then they get lectures from teacher B. The null-hypothesis is that the average teacher evaluation for teacher A is the same as the average teacher evaluation for teacher B. Do we analyse these data with an ordinary linear model, or with a linear mixed model? Explain your answer.
- 15. For a study to the effect of light on mood, we have data on 100 teachers. They were asked to rate their mood on a cloudy day and asked to rate their mood on a sunny day. We have the variable **mood**, the dummy variable **sunny** and we want to include a random effect for **teacher**. From the three syntaxes below, choose the one that is most suitable for your analysis and fill in the blanks.

```
MIXED ... WITH ...
/FIXED=...
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(...) COVTYPE(VC).
```

```
UNIANOVA ... WITH ...
/ design = ...
/ print = parameter.
```

```
UNIANOVA ... BY ...
/ design = ...
/ print = parameter.
```

- 16. A researcher wants to know whether students in green classrooms (colour = 1) perform better than students in yellow classrooms (colour = 2). The following data were collected (showing only a part):

| student | colour | performance |
|---------|--------|-------------|
| 1       | 1      | 6.79        |
| 2       | 2      | 8.28        |
| 3       | 1      | 9.08        |
| 4       | 2      | 5.65        |
| 5       | 1      | 8.43        |
| 6       | 2      | 8.51        |
| 7       | 1      | 7.43        |
| 8       | 2      | 7.45        |
| 9       | 1      | 7.44        |
| 10      | 2      | 7.11        |

Would you use an ordinary linear model or a linear mixed model to analyze these data? Explain your answer.

- 17. A researcher wants to know whether students in dark classrooms (brightness = 0) perform better than students in bright classrooms (brightness = 1). The following data were collected (showing only a part):

| student | brightness | performance |
|---------|------------|-------------|
| 1       | 0          | 8.66        |
| 1       | 1          | 5.95        |
| 2       | 0          | 6.50        |
| 2       | 1          | 9.47        |
| 3       | 0          | 9.46        |
| 3       | 1          | 8.14        |
| 4       | 0          | 8.21        |
| 4       | 1          | 4.96        |
| 5       | 0          | 7.51        |
| 5       | 1          | 6.91        |

Would you use an ordinary linear model or a linear mixed model to analyze these data? Explain your answer.

- 18. A landscaper believes that people get more creative once the environment becomes greener. She measures creativity before and after the introduction of new trees around the office building in a random sample of employees. Because creativity can also be influenced by the weather she also uses a dummy variable **sunny** to correct for these effects. Whether creativity is measured before or after the introduction of the trees is indicated by the variable **green** that is coded green=1 for after the introduction and green=0 for before the introduction. The model that she therefore runs in SPSS is the following:

```
MIXED creativity WITH green sunny
  /FIXED= green sunny
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(employee) COVTYPE(VC).
```

We get the following output:

Write a short paragraph describing these results and the conclusions in APA format.

#### Answers:

- Ad1: 10.57
- Ad2: -2.28
- Ad3: 8.31, 2.88

**Type III Tests of Fixed Effects**

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 161.896        | 9073.526 | .000 |
| green     | 1            | 98.273         | 109.513  | .000 |
| sunny     | 1            | 126.083        | 5.377    | .022 |

**Estimates of Fixed Effects**

| Parameter | Estimate  | Std. Error | df      | t       | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-----------|-----------|------------|---------|---------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|           |           |            |         |         |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept | 59.971909 | .629593    | 161.896 | 95.255  | .000 | 58.728636               | 61.215182   |
| green     | -4.501580 | .430162    | 98.273  | -10.465 | .000 | -5.355194               | -3.647967   |
| sunny     | -1.280658 | .552300    | 126.083 | -2.319  | .022 | -2.373637               | -.187679    |

**Estimates of Covariance Parameters**

| Parameter                                  | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                                   | 9.238257  | 1.318161   |
| Intercept [subject<br>= employee] Variance | 23.662234 | 4.073012   |

- Ad4: 1.79,1.34

- Ad5:

$$depression_{ij} = 10.57 + patient_i + (-2.28) \times measure + e_{ij} \quad (11.29)$$

$$patient_i \sim N(0, \sigma_p^2 = 1.79) \quad (11.30)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2 = 8.31) \quad (11.31)$$

- Ad 6: 10.57

- Ad 7:  $10.57 + -2.28 = 8.29$

- Ad 8: 1.79, 1.34

- Ad 9:  $10.57 \pm 2 \times 1.34 = 7.89, 13.25$

- Ad 10: 1.79, 1.34

- Ad 11:  $(10.57 - 2.28) \pm 2 \times 1.34 = 5.61, 10.79$

- Ad 12: For the effect of therapy (the measure variable), we see a  $b$ -value of -2.28 with a standard error of 0.407773, so if we use the  $\pm 2$  rule to compute a 95% confidence interval, we get  $[-2.28 - 2 \times 0.41, -2.28 + 2 \times 0.41] = [-3.1, -1.46]$ . The 95% interval does NOT contain the value 0 so we can reject the null-hypothesis that the effect of therapy is zero. Therefore, we conclude that therapy has an influence on depression. In this case we saw a decrease in depression levels after therapy.
- Ad 13: Two groups of patients are studied, and for each patient we have only one measure. Because we only have one measure for each unit of observation we conduct an ordinary linear model.
- Ad 14: One group of students is studied, and for each student we have two evaluations: one for teacher A and one for teacher B. Because we have more than one measure for each unit of observation, we have to use a linear mixed model.
- Ad15:

```
MIXED mood WITH sunny
/FIXED=sunny
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(teacher) COVTYPE(VC).
```

- Ad16: it seems as if each student was only measured once, there is no clustering, so we can use an ordinary linear model.
- Ad17: it seems as if each student was measured twice, in both dark and bright conditions, so we use a linear mixed model to account for clustering.
- Ad18:

A linear mixed model was run to test the effect of green surroundings on creativity. The analysis was corrected for the effects of weather (sunny or not sunny) and random effects for employees. The results showed a significant but negative effect of the introduction of trees on creativity: creativity was on average 4.5 points lower after the introduction,  $t(98) = -10.47, p < 0.001$ . This effect was present over and above the effect of the weather which by itself had also an effect, where creativity was 1.28 points lower on sunny days than on not cloudy days,  $t(98) = -2.32, p = 0.02$ . The variance not explained by weather and greenness was largely explained by individual differences in creativity among employees, with an intraclass correlation of  $\frac{23.7}{23.7+9.2} = 0.72$ . We conclude that the introduction of trees has a negative influence on creativity in the employees that worked in the building studied in this research.

### 11.3 Pre-mid-post intervention design

In many intervention studies, one has more than two measurement moments. For instance, you'd like to know if there is not only a short term effect of aspirin, but also a long-term effect. Suppose that the study mentioned in the previous section on headache among NY Times readers was extended by asking patients not only to rate their headache before aspirin and 3 hours after intake, but also 24 hours after intake. In this case our data could look like this:

| patient | measure1 | measure2 | measure3 |
|---------|----------|----------|----------|
| 1       | 52       | 45       | 47       |
| 2       | 59       | 50       | 55       |
| 3       | 65       | 56       | 58       |
| 4       | 51       | 37       | 42       |
| 5       | 62       | 50       | 55       |
| 6       | 61       | 53       | 57       |
| 7       | 56       | 44       | 55       |
| 8       | 62       | 48       | 53       |
| 9       | 56       | 48       | 49       |
| 10      | 58       | 45       | 44       |

So for each patient we have three measures: pre, post1 and post2. To see if there is some significant clustering, it is no longer possible to study this by computing a single correlation. We could however compute 3 different correlations: pre-post1, pre-post2, and post1-post2, but this is rather tedious, and moreover does not give us a single measure of the extent of clustering of the data. But there is an alternative: one could compute not a Pearson correlation, but an *intraclass correlation* (ICC). To do this, we need to bring the data again into a regression type format, like this (we call this *long format*, as opposed to *wide format*):

| patient | measure | headache |
|---------|---------|----------|
| 1       | 1       | 52       |
| 1       | 2       | 45       |
| 1       | 3       | 47       |
| 2       | 1       | 59       |
| 2       | 2       | 50       |
| 2       | 3       | 55       |
| 3       | 1       | 65       |
| 3       | 2       | 56       |
| 3       | 3       | 58       |
| 4       | 1       | 51       |

We can perform an analysis using a MIXED analysis in SPSS:

```
MIXED headache BY measure
/FIXED=measure
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(patient) COVTYPE(VC).
```



The output is given below:

**Type III Tests of Fixed Effects**

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 99.000         | 9162.260 | .000 |
| measure   | 2            | 198            | 309.580  | .000 |

**Estimates of Fixed Effects**

| Parameter      | Estimate       | Std. Error | df      | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|----------------|----------------|------------|---------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                |                |            |         |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept      | 51.680000      | .606686    | 136.283 | 85.184 | .000 | 50.480263               | 52.879737   |
| [measure=1.00] | 7.490000       | .413362    | 198     | 18.120 | .000 | 6.674843                | 8.305157    |
| [measure=2.00] | -2.360000      | .413362    | 198     | -5.709 | .000 | -3.175157               | -1.544843   |
| [measure=3.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |

b. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

**Estimates of Covariance Parameters**

| Parameter                              | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 8.543401  | .858644    |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 28.263434 | 4.431211   |

In the output we see the fixed effects of two automatically created dummy variables **measure=1** and **measure=2**, and the intercept. We also see the variances of the random effects: the variance of the residuals and the variance of the random effects for each patient.

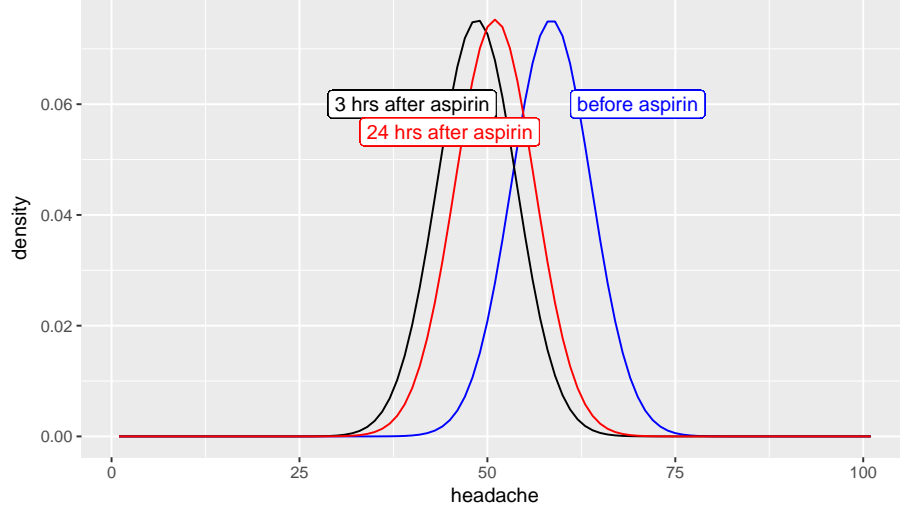
From this output, we can plug in the values into the equation:

$$\begin{aligned}
 headache_{ij} &= 51 + patient_i + 7.5 \times measure1 - 2.4 \times measure2 + e_{ij} \\
 patient_i &\sim N(0, 28.3) \\
 e_{ij} &\sim N(0, 8.5)
 \end{aligned}$$

Based on this equation, the expected headache severity score in the population 24 hours after aspirin intake is 51 (the third measure is the reference group). Dummy variable **measure=1** is coded 1 for the measurements before taking aspirin. Therefore, the expected headache score before aspirin intake is equal to  $51 + 7.5 = 58.5$ . Dummy variable **measure=2** was coded 1 for the measurements 3 hours after aspirin intake. Therefore, the expected headache score 3 hours after aspirin intake is equal to  $51 - 2.4 = 48.6$ . In sum, in this sample we see that the average headache level decreases directly after aspirin intake from 58.5 to 48.6, but then increases again to 51.

There was quite some variation in individual headache levels: the variance is equal to 28.3, so the standard deviation (its square root) is equal to about 5.3. Therefore, if we look at roughly 95% of the sample, we see that prior to taking

aspirin, the scores vary between  $58.5 - 2 \times 5.3 = 47.9$  and  $58.5 + 2 \times 5.3 = 69.1$ . For the short-term effect of aspirin after 3 hours, we see that roughly 95% of the scores lie between  $48.6 - 2 \times 5.3 = 38.0$  and  $48.6 + 2 \times 5.3 = 59.2$ . The normal distributions, predicted by this model, are depicted in the figure below:



So, are these distributions significantly different, in other words, do the means differ significantly before aspirin, 3hrs after aspirin and 24 hrs after aspirin? The answer is yes, because the  $F$ -test on the group means in the SPSS output is significant. Note the degrees of freedom: 2, because we compare 3 groups of data, so we need two dummy variables. Thus we report that aspirin has an effect on headache levels in NY Times readers,  $F(2, 198) = 309.58, p < 0.001$ .

If one has specific hypotheses regarding short-term and long-term effects, one could perform a planned contrast analysis, comparing the first measure with the second measure, and the first measure with the third measure. If one is just interested in whether aspirin has an effect on headache, then the  $F$ -test should suffice. If apart from this general effect one wishes to explore whether there are significant differences between the three groups of data, without any prior research hypothesis about this, then one could perform a post hoc analysis of the three means. See the relevant chapter on how to perform planned comparisons and post hoc tests.

Now recall that we mentioned an intraclass correlation, or ICC. An intraclass correlation indicates how much clustering there is within the groups, in this case, clustering of headache scores within NY Times readers. How much are the three scores alike that come from the same patient? This correlation can be computed on the basis of the SPSS output, using the following formula:

$$ICC = \frac{\sigma_{patient}^2}{\sigma_{patient}^2 + \sigma_e^2} \quad (11.32)$$

Here, the variance of the **patient** random effects is equal to 28.3, and the variance of the residuals  $e$  is equal to 8.5, so the intraclass correlation for the headache severity scores is equal to

$$ICC = \frac{28.3}{28.3 + 8.5} = 0.80 \quad (11.33)$$

As this correlation is quite higher than 0, there seems to be quite a lot of clustering. Therefore it's a good thing that we used random effects for the individual differences in headache scores among NY Times readers. Had this correlation been 0 or very close to 0, however, then it would not have mattered to include these random effects. In that case, we might as well use an ordinary linear model, using the UNIANOVA syntax for example. Note from the formula that the correlation becomes 0 when the variance of the random effects for patients is 0.

### 11.3.1 Exercises

Suppose you let a sample of students do a math test in three different rooms: one with yellow walls, one with red walls and one with blue walls. All students do the math test three times, once in every room. The data are as follows:

| student | colour | score |
|---------|--------|-------|
| 001     | yellow | 60    |
| 001     | red    | 66    |
| 001     | blue   | 60    |
| 002     | yellow | 24    |
| 002     | red    | 15    |
| 002     | blue   | 30    |
| 003     | yellow | 90    |
| 003     | red    | 90    |
| 003     | blue   | 89    |
| 004     | yellow | 10    |
| 004     | red    | 20    |
| 004     | blue   | 15    |
| 005     | yellow | 23    |
| 005     | red    | 13    |
| 005     | blue   | 18    |
| ...     | ...    | ...   |

- 1. If you want to test the hypothesis that the colour of the walls do not affect math test scores, and at the same time you want to take into account that some students are generally better at math than others, what

would the SPSS syntax be?

- 2. In the output that would result from that syntax from question 1, would you look at a  $t$ -test or or an  $F$ -test? Explain your answer.
- 3. How many degrees of freedom would you see for the denominator?
- 4. Suppose you see this in the output for this colour experiment. How important are the individual difference in math performance in the population of students? Can you quantify the amount of clustering?

### Covariance Parameters

Estimates of Covariance Parameters<sup>a</sup>

| Parameter                                 | Estimate   | Std. Error |
|---|------------|------------|
| Residual                                  | 269.529502 | 50.050372  |
| Intercept [subject<br>= student] Variance | 228.263602 | 85.188559  |

a. Dependent Variable: mathscore.

Answers:

- 1.

```
MIXED score BY colour
  /FIXED=colour
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(student) COVTYPE(VC).
```

- 2.  $F$ -test. There will be two dummy variable and I want to know if the effects of both of these are significantly different from 0. The  $t$ -tests give me only information about the dummy variables separately.
- 3. 2, because there are 3 different colours, which can be represented by 2 dummy-variables.
- 4. In the table with the data you generally see that students who score high in one room also score high in another room (for instance, students 001 and 003). Students who score low in one room also score low in another room (for instance students 002, 004 and 005). This clustering can be quantified using an intraclass correlation, in this case equal to  $\frac{228}{228+270} = 0.46$ .

## 11.4 Pre-mid-post intervention design: linear effects

In the previous section, we've looked at *qualitative* variables: **measure** (pre intervention, 3 hours after, and 24 hours after), or **colour** (yellow, red, and blue rooms). We can use the same type of analysis for *quantitative* variables. In fact, we could have used a linear effect for time in the headache example: using time of measurement as a variable. Let's look at the headache data again. But now we've created a new variable **time** that is based on the measure **variable**: all first measurements are coded as **time**=0, all second measurements after 3 hours are coded as **time**=3, and all third measurements after 24 hours are coded as **time**=24.

| patient | measure | headache | time |
|---------|---------|----------|------|
| 1       | 1       | 52       | 0    |
| 1       | 2       | 45       | 3    |
| 1       | 3       | 47       | 24   |
| 2       | 1       | 59       | 0    |
| 2       | 2       | 50       | 3    |
| 2       | 3       | 55       | 24   |
| 3       | 1       | 65       | 0    |
| 3       | 2       | 56       | 3    |
| 3       | 3       | 58       | 24   |
| 4       | 1       | 51       | 0    |

Instead of using a qualitative variable intervention, with three levels, we now use a quantitative variable, time, indicating the number of hours that have elapsed after aspirin intake. At point 0 hours, we measure headache severity, and patients take an aspirin. Next we measure headache after 3 hours and 24 hours. Above, we wanted to know if there were differences in average headache between before intake and 3hrs and 24 hrs after intake. Another question we might ask ourselves: is there a *linear* reduction in headache severity after taking aspirin?

For this we can do a linear regression type of analysis. We want to take into account individual differences in headache severity levels among patients, so we perform a MIXED analysis in SPSS, using the following syntax, replacing the key word BY with WITH, and the variable **measure** by **time**:

```
MIXED headache WITH time
/FIXED=time
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(patient) COVTYPE(VC).
```

Below we see the corresponding output:

Based on the output, we see that the model for our data is equivalent to

$$headache_{ij} = 54 + patient_i - 0.16 \times time + e_{ij} \quad (11.34)$$

Type III Tests of Fixed Effects

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 147.032        | 7811.150 | .000 |
| time      | 1            | 199.000        | 26.818   | .000 |

Estimates of Fixed Effects

| Parameter | Estimate  | Std. Error | df      | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-----------|-----------|------------|---------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|           |           |            |         |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept | 54.791316 | .619947    | 147.032 | 88.381 | .000 | 53.566159               | 56.016473   |
| time      | -.155702  | .030066    | 199.000 | -5.179 | .000 | -.214991                | -.096413    |

Estimates of Covariance Parameters

| Parameter                              | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 30.915686 | 3.099327   |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 20.806006 | 4.541038   |

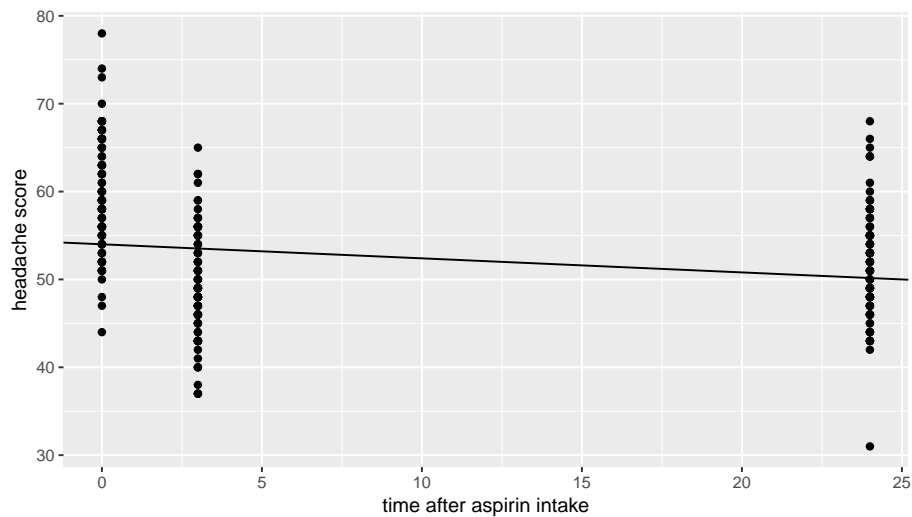
$$patient_i \sim N(0, 21) \quad (11.35)$$

$$e_{ij} \sim N(0, 31) \quad (11.36)$$

This model predicts that at time 0, the average headache severity score equals 54, and that for every hour after intake, the headache level drops by 0.16 points. So it predicts for example that after 10 hours, the headache has dropped 1.6 points to 52.4.

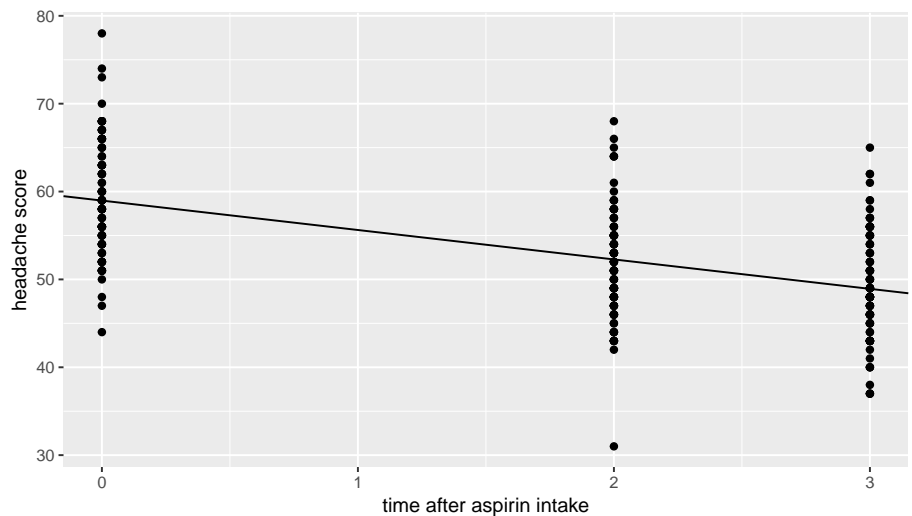
Is this a good model for the data? Probably not, look at the variance of the residuals: with its 31 it is now a lot bigger than in the previous analysis with the same data (see previous section). Larger variance of residuals means that the model explains the data worse: predictions are worse, so the residuals increase in size.

That the model is not appropriate for this data set is also obvious when we plot the data, focusing on the relationship between time and headache levels:



The line shown is the fitted line based on the SPSS output. It can be seen that the prediction for time=0 is too low, for time=2 too high, and for time=24 again too low. So for this particular data set on headache, it would be better to use a qualitative predictor for the effect of time on headache, like we did in the previous section.

As an example of a data set where a linear effect would have been appropriate, imagine that we measured headache 2 hours and 3 hours after aspirin intake (but not after 24 hours). Suppose these data would look like this:



Here we see a gradual increase of headache levels right after aspirin intake. Here, a quantitative treatment of the time variable would be more appropriate. The SPSS output is given below.

**Type III Tests of Fixed Effects**

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 133.169        | 9571.257 | .000 |
| time      | 1            | 199.000        | 596.514  | .000 |

**Estimates of Fixed Effects**

| Parameter | Estimate  | Std. Error | df      | t       | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-----------|-----------|------------|---------|---------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|           |           |            |         |         |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept | 58.972143 | .602785    | 133.169 | 97.833  | .000 | 57.779871               | 60.164414   |
| time      | -3.349286 | .137133    | 199.000 | -24.424 | .000 | -3.619706               | -3.078865   |

**Estimates of Covariance Parameters**

| Parameter                              | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 8.775878  | .879790    |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 28.185942 | 4.431672   |

From the output we see that the intercept is 59 and that the slope is -3.3. So this model predicts an hourly decrease of 3.3 points in headache level. This regression line is also depicted in the above figure.

Because we are confident that this model is appropriate for our data, we can interpret the statistical output from SPSS.

A linear mixed model was run, using a quantitative variable time and random effects for the variable patient. We saw a significant linear effect of time on headache level,  $t(199) = -24.42, p < 0.001$ . The estimated effect of time based on this analysis is negative,  $-3.3$ , so with every hour that elapses after aspirin intake, the predicted headache score decreases with 3.3 points.

### 11.4.1 Exercises

Suppose you have a number of CEOs with smart watches and you have these smart watches log skin conductance. Skin conductance is a good measure for stress. These measurements are done at random intervals, for at most 4 times during one day. The experiment starts at 7am and stops at 7pm. The **time** variable measures how many hours have passed since 7am.



| CEO | time | conductance |
|-----|------|-------------|
| 001 | 2    | 80          |
| 001 | 3    | 65          |
| 001 | 10   | 60          |
| 001 | 11   | 60          |
| 002 | 4    | 34          |
| 002 | 6    | 25          |
| 002 | 9    | 30          |
| 002 | 12   | 30          |
| 003 | 3    | 23          |
| 003 | 4    | 15          |
| 003 | 5    | 20          |
| 003 | 8    | 20          |
| 004 | 0    | 90          |
| 004 | 3    | 70          |
| 004 | 4    | 65          |
| 004 | 11   | 65          |
| ... | ...  | ...         |

Now you'd like to know if skin conductance in CEOs shows a general decrease during the day. Your null-hypothesis is therefore that there is no linear effect of time on skin conductance. Now, you have multiple measures for each CEO (repeated measures), and there might be individual differences in the average skin conductance that you would like to take into account. Therefore you perform a MIXED analysis in SPSS.

- 1. What would the SPSS syntax look like?
  
- 2. If you got the following output, what would your predicted skin conductance be for a CEO at 15.00 hrs?
  
- 3. Look at the data plotted: do you think a linear effect is reasonable for this data set?

## Fixed Effects

Type III Tests of Fixed Effects<sup>a</sup>

| Source    | Numerator df | Denominator df | F       | Sig. |
|-----------|--------------|----------------|---------|------|
| Intercept | 1            | 57.524         | 242.222 | .000 |
| time      | 1            | 59.000         | 17.981  | .000 |

a. Dependent Variable: conductance.

Estimates of Fixed Effects<sup>a</sup>

| Parameter | Estimate  | Std. Error | df     | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-----------|-----------|------------|--------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|           |           |            |        |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept | 61.738462 | 3.966881   | 57.524 | 15.563 | .000 | 53.796487               | 69.680436   |
| time      | -4.130769 | .974140    | 59.000 | -4.240 | .000 | -6.080020               | -2.181519   |

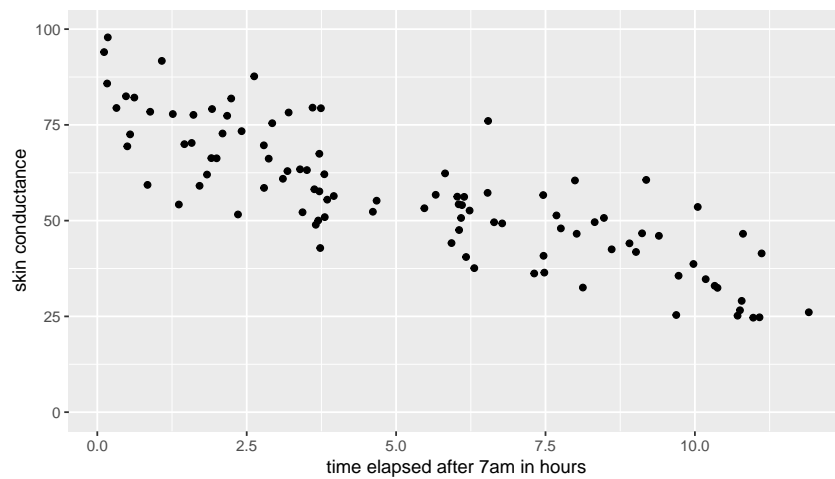
a. Dependent Variable: conductance.

## Covariance Parameters

Estimates of Covariance Parameters<sup>a</sup>

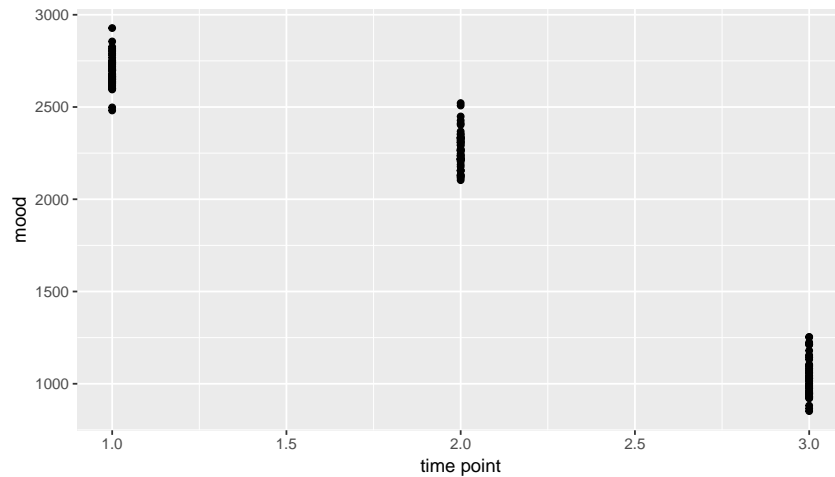
| Parameter                 | Estimate   | Std. Error |
|---------------------------|------------|------------|
| Residual                  | 246.726901 | 45.426105  |
| Intercept [subject = CEO] | 234.846972 | 84.637232  |

a. Dependent Variable: conductance.



- 4. How much clustering is there for skin conductance across CEOs?
- 5. Would you say these individual differences are very important to take into account?

- 6. Is there a significant effect of time of day on skin conductance in CEOs?
- 7. What is the effect of time of day on skin conductance in CEOs? Also give the 95% confidence interval of this effect.
- 8. Write a short paragraph that describes the results in APA format.
- 9. Given a new data set where every student's mood was tested at three points in time: During Christmas holidays (time points 1), during Easter holidays (time point 2) and at the start of the academic year, September 1 (time point 3). Look at the data plotted: do you think a linear effect is reasonable for this data set? Explain your answer.



- 10. Provide the syntax you would use to analyse the problem of question 9.

Answers:

- 1.

```
MIXED conductance WITH time
  /FIXED=time
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(CEO) COVTYPE(VC) .
```

- 2. 15 hrs is equal to 8 hours after 7am, so the expected skin conductance is equal to  $62 - 4 \times 8 = 30$
- 3. Yes, a general linear downward trend is observed for the skin conductance.

- 4. The intraclass correlation coefficient is equal to  $\frac{235}{235+247} = 0.49$ ,
- 5. The correlation is quite different from 0, so there is certainly some clustering in the data and it is important to take these individual differences into account.
- 6. Yes, there is a significant linear effect of time on skin conductance in CEOs,  $t(59) = -4.24, p < 0.01$ .
- 7. The linear effect of time of day on skin conductance in CEOs is around -4.13 points per hour after 7am (95 % CI: -6.08 – -2.18).
- 8.

A linear mixed model was run with time as a quantitative predictor for skin conductance, including random effects for CEO. We found an effect of time of -4.13 points per hour which was significantly different from 0,  $t(59) = -4.24, p < 0.001$ . Therefore we conclude that time of day has an effect on skin conductance in the entire population of CEOs.

- 9. The relationship is not linear: you cannot draw a straight line through the means of the three measurements.
- 10. Because we have multiple measurements from the same students we should use a MIXED analysis. Furthermore, a qualitative analysis would be more suitable, given the nonlinear relationship between time and mood. So we use the syntax:

```
MIXED mood BY time
  /FIXED=time
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(student) COVTYPE(VC).
```

## 11.5 Linear mixed models and interaction effects

Suppose we carry out the aspirin and headache study not only with a random sample of NY Times readers that suffer from regular headaches, but also with a random sample of readers of the Wall Street Journal that suffer from regular headaches. We'd like to know whether aspirin works, but we are also interested to know whether the effect of aspirin is similar in the two groups of readers. Our null-hypothesis is that the effect of aspirin in affecting headache severity is the same in NY Times and Wall Street Journal readers that suffer from headache.

H<sub>0</sub>: The effect of aspirin is the same for NY Times readers as for Wall Street Journal readers.

Suppose we have the following data set (we only show the first six patients), and we only look at the measurements before aspirin intake and 3 hours after aspirin intake (pre-post design):

| patient | group       | pre | post |
|---------|-------------|-----|------|
| 1       | NYTimes     | 55  | 45   |
| 2       | WallStreetJ | 63  | 50   |
| 3       | NYTimes     | 66  | 56   |
| 4       | WallStreetJ | 50  | 37   |
| 5       | NYTimes     | 63  | 50   |
| 6       | WallStreetJ | 65  | 53   |

In this part of the data set, patients 2, 4, and 6 read the Wall Street Journal, and patients 1, 3 and 5 read the NY Times. We assume that people only read one of these newspapers. We measure their headache before and after the intake of aspirin (a pre-post design). The data are now in what we call *wide format*: the dependent variable **headache** is spread over two columns, **pre** and **post**. In order to analyse the data with linear models, we need them in *long format*, like this:

| patient | group       | measure | headache |
|---------|-------------|---------|----------|
| 1       | NYTimes     | 1       | 55       |
| 1       | NYTimes     | 2       | 45       |
| 2       | WallStreetJ | 1       | 63       |
| 2       | WallStreetJ | 2       | 50       |
| 3       | NYTimes     | 1       | 66       |
| 3       | NYTimes     | 2       | 56       |

The new variable **measure** now indicates whether a given measurement of headache refers to a measurement before intake (first measurement) or after intake (second measurement). Again we could investigate whether there is an effect of aspirin with a linear mixed model, with **measure** as our qualitative predictor, but that is not really what we want to test: we only want to know whether the effect of aspirin (being small, large, negative or non-existent) *is the same for both groups*. Remember that this hypothesis states that there is no interaction effect of aspirin (**measure**) and group. The null-hypothesis is that group is *not* a moderator of the effect of aspirin on headache. There may be an effect of aspirin or there may not, and there may be an effect of newspaper (**group**) or there may not, but we're interested in the *interaction* of aspirin and group membership. Is the effect of aspirin different for NY times readers than for Wall Street Journal readers?

In our analysis we therefore need to specify an interaction effect. Since the data are clustered (2 measures per patient), we use a linear *mixed* model. First we show how to analyse these data using dummy variables, later we will show the results using a different approach.

We recode the data into two dummy variables, one for the aspirin intervention (measure), and one for group membership.

```
RECODE measure (1=0) (2=1) INTO post.  
RECODE group ('WallStreetJ'=0) ('NYTimes'=1) INTO NYTimes.  
EXECUTE.
```

Next we need to compute the product of these two dummies to code for the interaction effect. Since with the above dummy coding, all post measures get a 1, and all NYTimes readers get a 1, only the observations that are post aspirin and that are from NYTimes readers get a 1 for the product, the interactiondummy. That's why it is best to name this interaction effect PostNYTimes.

```
COMPUTE PostNYTimes=post*NYTimes.  
EXECUTE.
```

With these three new dummy variables we can specify the linear mixed model.

```
MIXED headache WITH post NYTimes PostNYTimes  
/FIXED= post NYTimes PostNYTimes  
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION  
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(patient) COVTYPE(VC).
```

In the output below, we recognize the three fixed effects for the three dummy variables. Since we're interested in the interaction effect, we look at the effect of PostNYTimes. The effect is in the order of +0.6. So what does this mean?

Remember that a reader from the Wall Street Journal gets a 0 for the group dummy **NYTimes**. All headache measures before aspirin intake are given a 0 for the intervention dummy **post**. Since the product of  $0 \times 0$  equals 0, all these measures before aspirin in Wallstreet Journal readers get a 0 for the interaction dummy **PostNYTimes**. Therefore, the intercept of 59.5 refers to the expected headache severity of Wall Street Journal readers *before* they take their aspirin. This is significantly different from zero, meaning that in the population of Wall Street Journal readers, headache before aspirin intake is different from zero.

Furthermore, we see that the effect of the intervention is -10.7. So, relative to Wall Street Journal readers prior to aspirin intake, the level of post intake headache is 10.7 points *less*. So in the population of Wall Street Journal readers, the effect of aspirin is different from 0, since the effect of -10.7 is significant.

If we look further down in the table, we see the effect of NYTimes equals 0.32. So, relative to Wall Street Journal readers, before aspirin intake (the reference group), NY Times readers score on average 0.32 points higher on the headache scale before aspirin intake.

However, we're not interested in a general difference between those two groups of readers, we're interested in the effect of aspirin and whether it is different in the two groups of readers. In the last row we see the interaction

Type III Tests of Fixed Effects

| Source      | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-------------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept   | 1            | 123.427        | 4966.920 | .000 |
| post        | 1            | 98.000         | 341.596  | .000 |
| NYTimes     | 1            | 123.427        | .072     | .789 |
| PostNYTimes | 1            | 98.000         | .541     | .464 |

Estimates of Fixed Effects

| Parameter   | Estimate   | Std. Error | df      | t       | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-------------|------------|------------|---------|---------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|             |            |            |         |         |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept   | 59.520000  | .844538    | 123.427 | 70.476  | .000 | 57.848346               | 61.191654   |
| post        | -10.660000 | .576768    | 98.000  | -18.482 | .000 | -11.804577              | -9.515423   |
| NYTimes     | .320000    | 1.194357   | 123.427 | .268    | .789 | -2.044076               | 2.684076    |
| PostNYTimes | .600000    | .815673    | 98.000  | .736    | .464 | -1.018677               | 2.218677    |

Estimates of Covariance Parameters

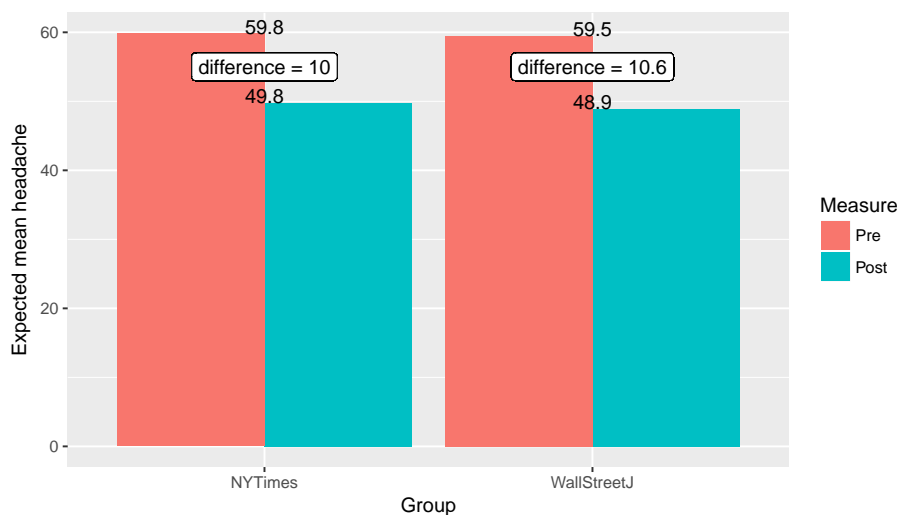
| Parameter                              | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 8.316531  | 1.188076   |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 27.345714 | 4.539603   |

effect: being a reader of the NY Times AND at the same time being a measure after aspirin intake, the expected increase in mean headache equals 0.60. So the effect of aspirin is -10.7 in Wall Street Journal readers, as we saw above, but the effect is  $-10.7 + 0.6 = -10.1$  in NY Times readers. So in this sample the effect of aspirin on headache is 0.6 *smaller* than in Wall Street Journal readers (note that even while the interaction effect is positive, it is positive on a scale where a high score means more headache).

Let's look at it in the different way, using a table with the dummy codes. For each group of data, pre or post aspirin and New York Times readers and Wall Street Journal readers, we note the dummy codes for the new dummy variables. In the last column we use the output estimates and multiply them with the respective dummy codes (1 and 0) to obtain the expected headache level (using rounded numbers):

| measure | group      | post | NYTimes | PostNYT | exp mean                        |
|---------|------------|------|---------|---------|---------------------------------|
| pre     | WallStreet | 0    | 0       | 0       | 60                              |
| post    | WallStreet | 1    | 0       | 0       | $60 + (-11) = 49$               |
| pre     | NYtimes    | 0    | 1       | 0       | $60 + 0.3 = 60.3$               |
| post    | NYtimes    | 1    | 1       | 1       | $60 + (-11) + 0.3 + 0.6 = 49.9$ |

The exact numbers are displayed in the graph below:



We see that the specific effect of aspirin in NYTimes readers is 0.6 smaller than the effect of aspirin in Wall Street Journal readers. This difference in the effect of aspirin between the groups was not significantly different from 0. The null-hypothesis that the effect is the same in the two populations of readers cannot be rejected. We therefore conclude that the effect that aspirin has on patients is the same for NY Times and Wall Street Journal readers.

Note that we could have done the analysis in another way, not treating the variables in a quantitative way and using dummy variables, but by treating them qualitatively using the key word BY. The SPSS syntax would then be:

```
MIXED headache BY measure group
  /FIXED=measure group measure*group
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(patient) COVTYPE(VC).
```

The output would then look like below:

Here SPSS has automatically created dummy variables, one for **measure=1**, one for **group=1**, and one for the interaction effect, **group=1 AND measure=1**. Because the dummy coding is different, the intercept and the main effects of group and measure have changed, but you see that the interaction effect is still 0.6, albeit now negative. We also see that the significance level of the interaction effect is still the same. You are always free to choose to either construct your own dummy variables and analyze them in a quantitative way (using WITH), or to let SPSS construct the dummy variables for you (using BY): the  $p$ -value for the interaction effect will always be the same (this is not true for the intercept and the main effects).

Because the two analyses are equivalent (they end up with exactly the same predictions, feel free to check!), we can safely report that we've found a non-significant group by measure interaction effect,  $t(98) = 0.74, p = 0.46$ . We



Type III Tests of Fixed Effects

| Source          | Numerator df | Denominator df | F        | Sig. |
|-----------------|--------------|----------------|----------|------|
| Intercept       | 1            | 98.000         | 9428.174 | .000 |
| measure         | 1            | 98.000         | 645.279  | .000 |
| group           | 1            | 98.000         | .305     | .582 |
| measure * group | 1            | 98.000         | .541     | .464 |

Estimates of Fixed Effects

| Parameter                     | Estimate       | Std. Error | df      | t      | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|-------------------------------|----------------|------------|---------|--------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                               |                |            |         |        |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept                     | 48.860000      | .844538    | 123.427 | 57.854 | .000 | 47.188346               | 50.531654   |
| [measure=1.00]                | 10.660000      | .576768    | 98.000  | 18.482 | .000 | 9.515423                | 11.804577   |
| [measure=2.00]                | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |
| [group=1.00]                  | .920000        | 1.194357   | 123.427 | .770   | .443 | -1.444076               | 3.284076    |
| [group=2.00]                  | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |
| [measure=1.00] * [group=1.00] | -.600000       | .815673    | 98.000  | -.736  | .464 | -2.218677               | 1.018677    |
| [measure=1.00] * [group=2.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |
| [measure=2.00] * [group=1.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |
| [measure=2.00] * [group=2.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .      | .    | .                       | .           |

b. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

Estimates of Covariance Parameters

| Parameter                              | Estimate  | Std. Error |
|--|-----------|------------|
| Residual                               | 8.316531  | 1.188076   |
| Intercept [subject = patient] Variance | 27.345714 | 4.539603   |

therefore conclude that in the populations of NY Times readers and Wall Street Journal readers, the short-term effect of aspirin on headache is the same.

### 11.5.1 Exercises

Below we see data from a study on the effects of the financial crisis on the number of employees in specific Dutch companies. The companies are distinguished into food and non-food related companies. The number of employees are recorded in January 2008 and January 2011.

| company | food    | 2008 | 2011 |
|---------|---------|------|------|
| 1       | nonfood | 42   | 63   |
| 2       | food    | 104  | 126  |
| 3       | nonfood | 76   | 58   |
| 4       | food    | 65   | 131  |

1. These data are in wide format. Rewrite the datamatrix in such a way that

we have the same data in long format. Provide column (variable) names.

| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |

2. Do we need to use a linear mixed model, or can we analyse these data with an ordinary linear model?
3. We want to test the null-hypothesis that the effects of the financial crisis in 2008 has the same effect on the number of employees in the food sector as in the non-food sector. Provide the syntax that helps you test this hypothesis.
4. Suppose the following output results from an analysis done by a colleague:  
She provides you with the information that food=1 means the food sector and food=2 is the nonfood sector.  
What does the model predict regarding the number of employees in 2008 in the non-food sector?
5. What does the model predict regarding the number of employees in 2011 in the non-food sector?
6. What does the model predict regarding the number of employees in 2008 in the food sector?
7. What does the model predict regarding the number of employees in 2011 in the food sector?
8. How large is the effect of the crisis in the food sector?
9. How large is the effect of the crisis in the non-food sector
10. How large is the intraclass correlation (ICC)? Give the computation.
11. Could we have done the analysis with an ordinary linear model? Explain your answer.

**Type III Tests of Fixed Effects**

| Source      | Numerator df | Denominator df | F         | Sig. |
|-------------|--------------|----------------|-----------|------|
| Intercept   | 1            | 998.000        | 70192.133 | .000 |
| food        | 1            | 998.000        | 3389.819  | .000 |
| year        | 1            | 998            | 1122.117  | .000 |
| food * year | 1            | 998            | .437      | .509 |

**Estimates of Fixed Effects**

| Parameter                       | Estimate       | Std. Error | df       | t       | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|---------------------------------|----------------|------------|----------|---------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                                 |                |            |          |         |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept                       | 81.574000      | .664366    | 1989.879 | 122.785 | .000 | 80.271074               | 82.876926   |
| [food=1.00]                     | 39.312000      | .939556    | 1989.879 | 41.841  | .000 | 37.469384               | 41.154616   |
| [food=2.00]                     | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .        | .       | .    | .                       | .           |
| [year=2008.00]                  | -22.056000     | .913130    | 998      | -24.154 | .000 | -23.847874              | -20.264126  |
| [year=2011.00]                  | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .        | .       | .    | .                       | .           |
| [food=1.00] *<br>[year=2008.00] | .854000        | 1.291360   | 998      | .661    | .509 | -1.680093               | 3.388093    |
| [food=1.00] *<br>[year=2011.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .        | .       | .    | .                       | .           |
| [food=2.00] *<br>[year=2008.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .        | .       | .    | .                       | .           |
| [food=2.00] *<br>[year=2011.00] | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .        | .       | .    | .                       | .           |

b. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

**Estimates of Covariance Parameters**

| Parameter                                 | Estimate   | Std. Error |
|---|------------|------------|
| Residual                                  | 208.451418 | 9.331567   |
| Intercept [subject<br>= company] Variance | 12.239802  | 6.996594   |

12. Can we reject the null-hypothesis that the effects of the crisis were the same in the food and non-food sectors? Explain your answer.

Answers:

1. It could look like this:

| company | sector  | year | NEmployees | ... |
|---------|---------|------|------------|-----|
| 1       | nonfood | 2008 | 42         | ... |
| 1       | nonfood | 2011 | 63         | ... |
| 2       | food    | 2008 | 104        | ... |
| 2       | food    | 2011 | 126        | ... |
| 3       | nonfood | 2008 | 76         | ... |
| 3       | nonfood | 2011 | 58         | ... |
| 4       | food    | 2008 | 65         | ... |
| 4       | food    | 2011 | 131        | ... |

2. The data are clustered into companies: for each company we have two data points, so we should at least try a linear mixed model. Only if the variance of the company random effects is extremely small, we could use a linear model without random effects.
3. One option is to let SPSS construct the dummy variables:

```
MIXED employees BY year sector
  /FIXED=year sector year*sector
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(company) COVTYPE(VC).
```

Or you do the dummy coding yourself, for example like this:

```
RECODE year (2008=0) (2011=1) INTO year2011.
RECODE sector ('Nonfood'=0) ('food'=1) INTO food.
EXECUTE.
```

```
COMPUTE food2011=year2011*food.
EXECUTE.
```

```
MIXED employees WITH year2011 food food2011
  /FIXED= year2011 food food2011
  /PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
  /RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(company) COVTYPE(VC).
```

4. the nonfood sector is food=0, so the predicted number of employees in 2008 in the nonfood sector is equal to  $81.57 + 0 - 22.056 + 0 = 59.514$
5. the nonfood sector is food=0, so the predicted number of employees in 2011 in the nonfood sector is equal to  $81.57 + 0 + 0 + 0 = 81.57$
6. the food sector is food=1, so the predicted number of employees in 2008 in the food sector is equal to  $81.57 + 39.31 - 22.056 + 0.85 = 99.674$
7. the food sector is food=1, so the predicted number of employees in 2011 in the food sector is equal to  $81.57 + 39.31 + 0 + 0 = 120.88$
8. in the food sector the effect is a  $120.88 - 99.674 = 21.206$  increase in number of employees
9. in the non-food sector the effect is a  $81.57 - 59.514 = 22.056$  increase in number of employees

10. the ICC is  $\frac{12}{12+208} = 0.05$
11. we have clustering, with multiple data point per company, so in general a linear mixed model is better than an ordinary linear model. However, since the intraclass correlation is rather low, the results would be very similar if we would use an ordinary linear model.
12. The null-hypothesis cannot be reject as the year by sector interaction effect is not significantly different from 0,  $t(998) = 0.66, p = 0.51$ . (alternatively,  $F(1, 998) = 0.44, p = 0.51$ ). Note however that the statistical results are in terms of absolute number of employees. These data show that the average number of employees in 2008 is larger in the food sector than in the non-food sector. Perhaps it would be wiser to look at percentage increase in number of employees: A change from 100 to 102 reflects a larger impact than a change from 1000 to 1002.

## 11.6 Mixed designs

The design in the previous section where we had both a grouping variable and a pre-post or repeated measures design, is often called a *mixed design*. It is a mixed design in the sense that there are two kinds of variables: one is a *between-individuals* variable, and one variable is a *within-individual* variable. Here the between-individuals variable is **group**: two different populations of readers. It is called *between* because one individual can only be part of one group. When we study the effect of the group effect we are essentially comparing the scores of one group of individuals with the scores of another group of individuals, so the comparison is *between different individuals*. The two groups of data are said to be *independent*, as we knew that none of the readers in this data set reads both journals.

The within-variable in this design is the aspirin intervention, indicated by the variable **measure**. For each individual we have two observations: all individuals are present in both the pre condition data as well as in the post condition data. With this intervention variable, we are comparing the scores of a group of individuals with the scores of *that same group of individuals* at another time point. The comparison of scores is within a particular individual, at timepoint 1 and at timepoint 2. So the pre and post sets of data are not independent: the headache scores in both conditions are coming from the same individuals.

Mixed designs are often seen in psychological experiments. For instance, you want to know how large the effect of alcohol intake is on driving performance. You want to know whether the effect of alcohol on driving performance is the same in a Fiat 600 as in a Porsche. Suppose you have 100 participants for your study. There are many choices you can make regarding the design of your study. Here we discuss 4 alternative research designs:

1. One option is to have all participants participate in all four conditions: they all drive a Fiat with and without alcohol, and they all drive a Porsche,

with and without alcohol. In this case, both the car and the alcohol are within-participant variables.

2. The second option is to have 50 participants drive a Porsche, with and without alcohol, and to have the other 50 participants drive the Fiat, with and without alcohol. In this case, the car is the between-participants variable, and alcohol is the within-participant variable.
3. The third option is to have 50 participants without alcohol drive both the Porsche and the Fiat, and to have the other 50 participants drive the Porsche and the Fiat with alcohol. Now the car is the within-participant variable, and the alcohol is the between-participants variable.
4. The fourth option is to have 25 participants drive the Porsche with alcohol, 25 other participants drive the Porsche without alcohol, 25 participants drive the Fiat with alcohol, and the remaining 25 participants drive the Fiat without alcohol. Now both the car variable and the alcohol variable are between-participant variables: none of the participants is present in more than 1 condition.

Only the second and the third design described here are mixed designs, having at least one between-participants variable and at least one within-participant variable.

Remember that when there is at least one within variable in your design, you have to use a linear mixed model. If all variables are between variables, one can use an ordinary linear model. Note that the term *mixed* in linear mixed model refers to the effects in the model that can be both random and fixed. The term *mixed* in mixed designs refers to the mix of two kinds of variables: within variables and between variables.

Also note that the within and between distinction refers to the units of analysis. If the unit of analysis is school, then the location of the school building is a between-school variable. An example of a within-school variable could be time: before a major curriculum reform and after a major curriculum reform.

### 11.6.1 Exercises

1. A psychologist studies whether age affects math performance. In 2017, she measures math performance (one score) in a group of 80-year-olds and she measures math performance (one score) in a group of 90-year-olds.
  1. In this design, is the age variable a between-participants variable or a within-participant variable?
  2. Would you analyze these data with a linear model, or with a linear mixed model? Explain.
2. A psychologist studies whether age affects math performance. She measures math performance (one score) in a group of 7-year-olds and she

measures math performance again when the same children are 8 years old.

1. In this design, is the age variable a between-participants variable or a within-participant variable?
2. Would you analyze these data with a linear model, or with a linear mixed model? Explain.

3. Look at the data table below.

| ID  | Nationality | Sex    | Mathscore |
|-----|-------------|--------|-----------|
| 1   | Dutch       | Male   | 67        |
| 2   | Dutch       | Female | 88        |
| 3   | German      | Male   | 50        |
| 4   | German      | Female | 98        |
| ... | ...         | ...    | ...       |

In this data set on Math performance, we see two variables, nationality and sex. What kind of variables are these: within-participant variables or between-participants variables? Explain.

1. Would you call this a mixed design? Explain.
2. Would you analyze this data set with a linear model or with a linear mixed model? Explain.

4. Look at the data table below.

| ID  | Nationality | Age | Mathscore |
|-----|-------------|-----|-----------|
| 1   | Dutch       | 3   | 67        |
| 1   | Dutch       | 5   | 88        |
| 2   | German      | 4   | 50        |
| 2   | German      | 6   | 98        |
| ... | ...         | ... | ...       |

In this data set on Math performance, we see two variables, nationality and age. What kind of variables are these: within-participant variables or between-participants variables? Explain.

1. Would you call this a mixed design? Explain.
2. Would you analyze this data set with a linear model or with a linear mixed model? Explain.

5. Look at the data table below.

| ID  | Subject    | Sex    | Mood |
|-----|------------|--------|------|
| 1   | Psychology | Male   | 67   |
| 1   | Psychology | Female | 88   |
| 2   | Sociology  | Female | 50   |
| 2   | Sociology  | Male   | 98   |
| ... | ...        | ...    | ...  |

In this data set on mood in transsexuals, we see two variables, the subject they have a Master's degree in, and sex. What kind of variables are these: within-participant variables or between-participants variables? Explain.

1. Would you call this a mixed design? Explain.
2. Would you analyze this data set with a linear model or with a linear mixed model? Explain.

6. Look at the data table below.

| SchoolID | Country         | Year | Avarage Mathscore |
|----------|-----------------|------|-------------------|
| 1        | The Netherlands | 2010 | 67                |
| 1        | The Netherlands | 2011 | 88                |
| 1        | The Netherlands | 2012 | 50                |
| 1        | The Netherlands | 2013 | 98                |
| 2        | Germany         | 2010 | 67                |
| 2        | Germany         | 2011 | 88                |
| 2        | Germany         | 2012 | 50                |
| 2        | Germany         | 2013 | 98                |
| ...      | ...             | ...  | ...               |

In this data set on average Math performance in schools, we see two variables, country of the school and year of data collection. What kind of variables are these: within-school variables or between-schools variables? Explain.

1. Would you call this a mixed design? Explain.
2. Would you analyze this data set with a linear model or with a linear mixed model? Explain.

Answers:

1. 1. The age variable is a between-participants variable: some of the participants are 80 years old and some are 90 years old: none are both at the same time. Age discriminates between two sets of participants, so it is a between-participants variable. 2. Two groups of participants were studied. Because we only have one measure for each participant, there is no clustering, and we use an ordinary linear model.
2. 1. The age variable is a within-participants variable: children are studied twice and scores can therefore be compared within an individual. 2. One



group of participants was studied and for each participant we have two math scores. Because we have more than one measure for each participant, we have to use a linear mixed model to account for clustering.

3. Each participant is either Dutch or German. This is a between-participants variable. Each participant is either male or female, sex discriminates between separate groups of participants, so sex is a between-participants variable. 1. This is *not* a mixed design as it does not have both within-participant and between-participants independent variables. 2. Because we only have one measure for each participant, there is no clustering, and we use an ordinary linear model.
4. Each participant is either Dutch or German. This is a between-participants variable. On measurement 1 participants have a different age than on measurement 2. This is a within-participant variable. 1. This is a mixed design as it has both a within-participant and a between-participants independent variable. 2. For each participant we have two math scores, so we would have to use a linear mixed model to account for clustering.
5. Each participant has only one Masters degree. This is a between-participants variable. Between the two measurements, participants change their sex. This is a within-participant variable: we can compare people's mood when they are male and when they are female. 1. This is a mixed design as it has both a within-participant and a between-participants independent variable. 2. For each participant we have two mood scores, so we would have to use a linear mixed model to account for clustering.
6. Each school is based in only one country and has measurements across four years. Country is a between-schools variable and year is a within-school variable. 1. This is a mixed design as it has both a within-school and a between-schools independent variable. 1. For each school we have four average math scores, so we would have to use a linear mixed model to account for clustering.

## 11.7 Mixed design with a linear effect

In an earlier section we looked at a mixed design where the between variable was **newspaper** and the within variable was **measure**: pre or post. It was a  $2 \times 2$  design: 2 measures and 2 newspapers, where we were interested in the interaction effect. We wanted to know whether newspaper moderated the effect of aspirin on headache. We used the within variable **measure** in a qualitative way by dummy coding it.

In an earlier section in this chapter we saw that we can also model linear effects in linear mixed models, where we treated the time variable quantitatively: 0hrs, 3hrs after aspirin intake and 24 hrs after intake. Here we will give an example of a  $3 \times 20$  mixed design: we have a qualitative group (between) variable with 3 levels and a quantitative time (within) variable with 20 levels. The

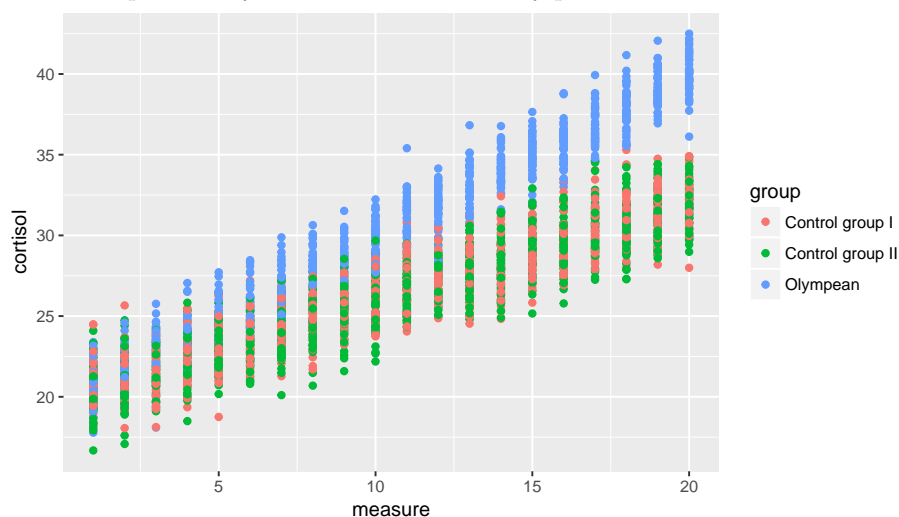
example is about stress in athletes that are going to partake in the 2018 Winter Olympics. Stress can be revealed in morning cortisol levels. In the 20 days preceding the start of the Olympics, each athlete was measured every morning after waking and before breakfast by letting them chew on cotton. The cortisol level in the saliva was then measured in the lab. Our research question is whether cortisol levels rise in athletes that prepare for the Olympics.

Three groups were studied. One group consisted of 50 athletes who were selected to partake in the Olympics, one group consisted of 50 athletes that were very good but were not selected to partake (Control group I) and one group consisted of 50 non-athlete spectators that were going to watch the games (Control group II). The null-hypothesis was that the linear change in cortisol levels during those 20 days was the same for the three groups: the Olympians, Control group I and Control group II.

Below you see part of the data, the first 6 measurements on person 1 that belongs to the group of Olympians.

| person | group    | measure | cortisol |
|--------|----------|---------|----------|
| 1      | Olympian | 1       | 19.41570 |
| 1      | Olympian | 2       | 20.21298 |
| 1      | Olympian | 3       | 22.15560 |
| 1      | Olympian | 4       | 23.10641 |
| 1      | Olympian | 5       | 23.69396 |
| 1      | Olympian | 6       | 21.91889 |

When we plot the data, and use different colours for the three different groups, we already notice that the Olympians show generally higher cortisol levels, but particularly at the end of the 20-day period.



So we want to know whether the linear effect of time is moderated by group. Since for every person we have 20 measurements, the data are clustered so we use a linear mixed model. We're looking for a linear effect of time, so we use the WITH keyword to indicate that we want to use the **measure** variable in a

quantitative way. We also use **group** as a predictor, but in a qualitative way, by using the keyword BY, so that SPSS will automatically make dummy variables. Because we're interested in an interaction effect, we include both main effects of **group** and **measure** and their interaction under the DESIGN subcommand. Lastly, we control for individual differences in cortisol levels by introducing a random effect for **person**.

```
MIXED cortisol WITH measure BY group
/FIXED=measure group measure*group
/PRINT=DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION
/RANDOM=intercept | SUBJECT(person) COVTYPE(VC).
```

The SPSS output is presented below.

Type III Tests of Fixed Effects

| Source          | Numerator df | Denominator df | F         | Sig. |
|-----------------|--------------|----------------|-----------|------|
| Intercept       | 1            | 197.391        | 49368.492 | .000 |
| measure         | 1            | 2847           | 54256.135 | .000 |
| group           | 2            | 197.391        | 1.698     | .186 |
| group * measure | 2            | 2847           | 1857.202  | .000 |

Estimates of Fixed Effects

| Parameter              | Estimate       | Std. Error | df      | t       | Sig. | 95% Confidence Interval |             |
|------------------------|----------------|------------|---------|---------|------|-------------------------|-------------|
|                        |                |            |         |         |      | Lower Bound             | Upper Bound |
| Intercept              | 19.691068      | .155004    | 197.391 | 127.036 | .000 | 19.385393               | 19.996744   |
| measure                | 1.008885       | .005476    | 2847    | 184.239 | .000 | .998148                 | 1.019622    |
| [group=1.00]           | .402950        | .219208    | 197.391 | 1.838   | .068 | -.029340                | .835241     |
| [group=2.00]           | .176148        | .219208    | 197.391 | .804    | .423 | -.256142                | .608439     |
| [group=3.00]           | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .       | .    | .                       | .           |
| [group=1.00] * measure | -.411896       | .007744    | 2847    | -53.188 | .000 | -.427081                | -.396711    |
| [group=2.00] * measure | -.405513       | .007744    | 2847    | -52.364 | .000 | -.420698                | -.390328    |
| [group=3.00] * measure | 0 <sup>b</sup> | 0          | .       | .       | .    | .                       | .           |

b. This parameter is set to zero because it is redundant.

Estimates of Covariance Parameters

| Parameter                             | Estimate | Std. Error |
|---------------------------------------|----------|------------|
| Residual                              | .997033  | .026426    |
| Intercept [subject = person] Variance | .986156  | .120850    |

In the output we see an intercept of 19.7, a slope of 1.0 for the effect of measure, two main effects for the group variable (group3 is the reference group, in this case the Olympeans, see the plot above), and two effects for the interaction

effect (one for control group I and one for control group II). Let's fill in the linear equation based on this output:

$$\begin{aligned} cortisol_{ij} &= 19.7 + person_i + 1 \times measure + .4ContrG1 + \\ &0.18ContrG2 - .4ContrG1 \times measure - .4ContrG2 \times measure + e_{ij} \\ person_i &\sim N(0, \sigma_p^2 = 0.99) \\ e_{ij} &\sim N(0, \sigma_e^2 = 1.00) \end{aligned}$$

We see a clear intraclass correlation of around  $\frac{0.986}{0.986+0.997} = 0.5$  so it's a good thing we've included a random effect for persons. The expected means at various time points and for various groups can be made with the use of the above equation.

It's easier to see what linear effects we have for the three different groups. Filling in the above equation for Control group 1, we get:

$$\begin{aligned} cortisol_{ij} &= 19.7 + person_i + 1 \times measure + .4 - .4 \times measure + e_{ij} \\ &= 20.1 + person_i + 0.6 \times measure + e_{ij} \end{aligned}$$

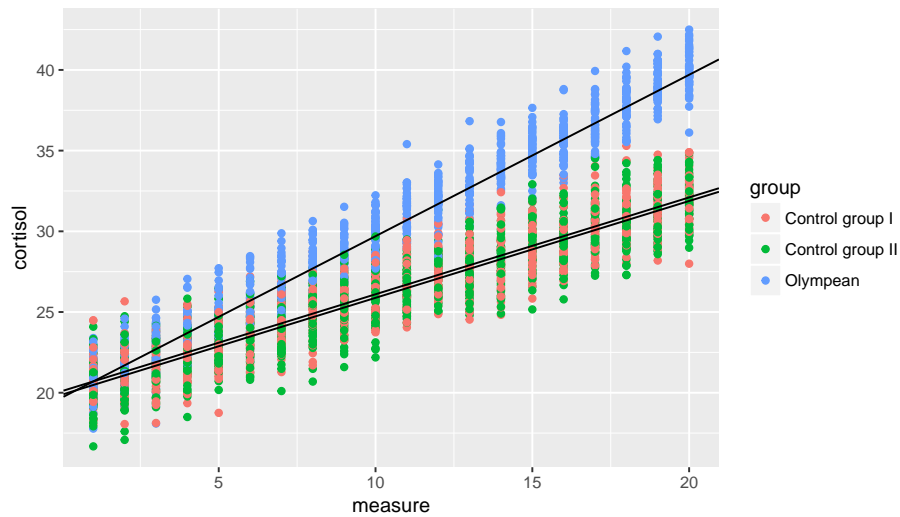
For Control group 2 we get:

$$\begin{aligned} cortisol_{ij} &= 19.7 + person_i + 1 \times measure + 0.18 - .4 \times measure + e_{ij} \\ &= 19.88 + person_i + 0.6 \times measure + e_{ij} \end{aligned}$$

And for the Olympeans we get:

$$cortisol_{ij} = 19.7 + person_i + 1 \times measure + e_{ij} \quad (11.37)$$

In these equations all intercepts are around 20. The slopes are 0.6 in both Control groups I and II, whereas the slope is 1.0 in the group of Olympean athletes. For illustration, these implied linear regression lines are depicted below:



So based on the linear equation, we see that in this sample the rise in cortisol levels is much steeper in Olympians than in the two control groups. But is this true for all Olympians and the rest of the populations of high performing athletes and spectators? Note that in the regression table we see two interaction effects: one for **group1\*measure** and one for **group2\*measure**. Here we're interested in the overall significance of the interaction effects. That answer we find in the top table with the  $F$ -statistics: we see a significant group by measure interaction effect,  $F(2, 28) = 18.57, p < 0.001$ . The null-hypothesis of the same cortisol change in three different populations can be rejected, and we conclude that Olympian athletes, non-Olympian athletes and spectators show a different change in cortisol levels in the weeks preceding the games.

## Chapter 12

# Non-parametric alternatives for linear mixed models

### 12.1 Checking assumptions

In previous chapters we have discussed the assumptions of linear models and linear mixed models: linearity (in parameters), homoscedasticity (equal variance), normal distribution of residuals, normal distribution of random effects (relevant for linear mixed models only), and independence (no clustering unaccounted for).

The problem of nonlinearity can be solved by introducing quadratic terms, for instance by replacing a linear model  $Y = b_0 + b_1X + e$  by another linear model  $Y = b_0 + b_1X + b_2X^2 + e$ .

If we have nonindependence, then you can introduce either an extra fixed effect or a random effect for this clustering. For example, if you see that cars owned by low income families have much more mileage than cars owned by high income families, you can account for this by adding a fixed effect of an income variable as predictor. If you see that average mileage is rather similar within municipality but that average mileage can vary quite a lot across municipalities, you can introduce a random effect for municipality (if you have data say from 30 different municipalities).

Unequal variance of residuals and nonnormal distribution of residuals are harder to tackle. Unequal variance can be tackled sometimes by using linear models, but with more advanced options, or by making corrections to  $p$ -values that make inference more robust against model violations. Violations of normality are even a bigger problem. Nonnormality can sometimes be solved by using generalized linear models (see next chapter). A combination of nonnormality and unequal variance can sometimes be solved by using a transformation of the data, for instance not analyzing  $Y = b_0 + b_1X + e$  but analyzing  $\log(Y) = b_0 + b_1X + e$  or  $\sqrt{Y} = b_0 + b_1X + e$ .

If these data transformations or advanced options don't work (or if you're

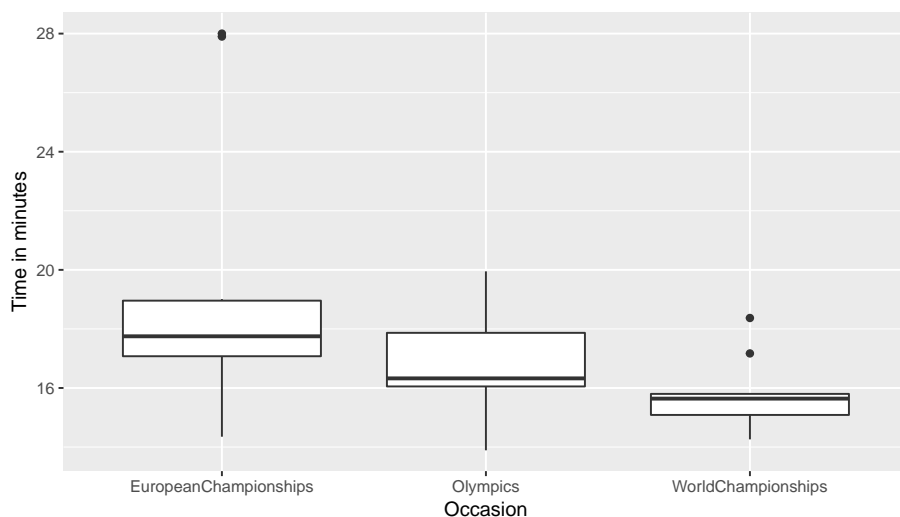


Figure 12.1: Boxplot of the imaginary speed skating data.

not acquainted with them), and your data show nonequal variance and/or non-normally distributed residuals, there are nonparametric alternatives. Here we discuss two: Friedman’s test and Wilcoxon’s signed rank test. We explain them using an imaginary data set on speedskating.

Suppose we have data on 12 speedskaters that participate on the 10 kilometers distance in three separate championships in 2017-2018: the European Championships, the Winter Olympics and the World Championships. Your friend expects that speedskaters will perform best at the Olympic games, so there she expects the fastest times. So you decide to test the null-hypothesis that average times are the same at the three occasions. In Figure 12.1 we see a boxplot of the data.

In order to test this null-hypothesis, we run a linear mixed model with dependent variable time, and independent variable occasion. We use random effects for the differences in speed across skaters. In Figure 12.2 we see the residuals:

From this plot we clearly see that the assumption of equal variance (homogeneity of variance) is violated: the variance of the residuals in the World-championships condition is clearly smaller than the variance of the European championships condition. From the histogram of the residuals in Figure 12.3 we also see that the distribution of the residuals is not bell-shaped: it is positively skewed (skewed to the right).

Since the assumptions of homogeneity of variance and of normally distributed residuals are violated<sup>1</sup>, the results from the linear mixed model cannot be

<sup>1</sup>Remember that assumptions relate to the population not samples: oftentimes your data

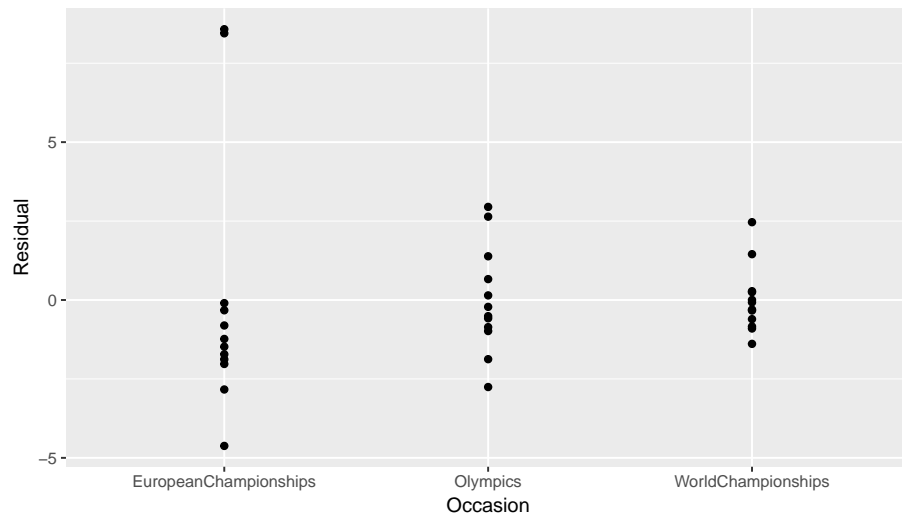


Figure 12.2: Residuals of the speedskating data with a linear mixed model.

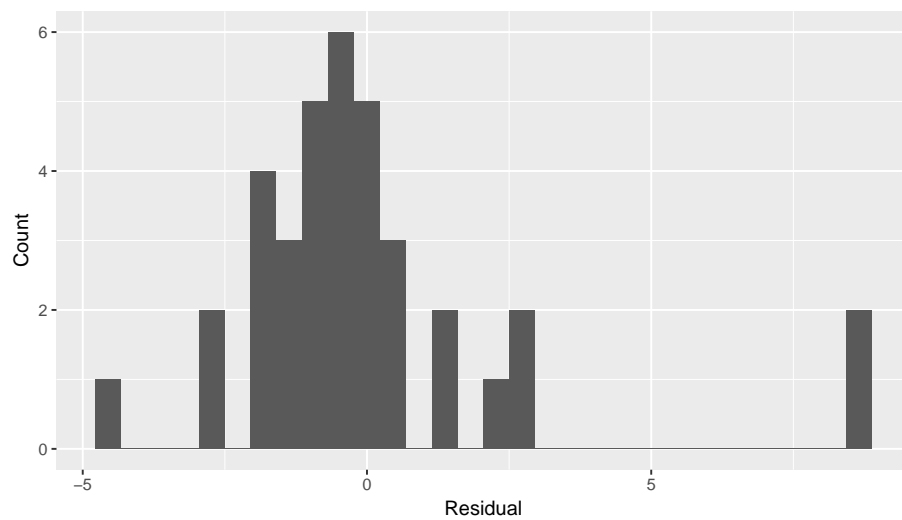


Figure 12.3: Histogram of the residuals of the speedskating data with a linear mixed model.



trusted. In order to answer our research question, we therefore have to resort to another kind of test. Here we discuss Friedman's test, a non-parametric test, for testing the null-hypothesis that the *medians* of the three groups of data are the same. This Friedman test can be used in all situations where you have at least 2 levels of the within variable. In other words, you can use this test when you have data from three occasions, but also when you have data from 10 occasions or only 2. In the following section the Wilcoxon signed ranks test is discussed. This test is often used in social and behavioural sciences. The downside of this test is that it can only handle data sets with 2 levels of the within variable. In other words, it can only be used when we have data from two occasions. Friedman's test is therefore more generally applicable than Wilcoxon's. We therefore advise to always go with the Friedman test, but for the sake of completeness, we will also explain the Wilcoxon test.

## 12.2 Friedman's test for $k$ measures

Similar to many other nonparametric tests for testing the equality of medians, Friedman's test is based on ranks. Figure ?? shows the speedskating data in wide format.

Table 12.1: The speedskating data in wide format.

| athlete | EuropeanChampionships | Olympics | WorldChampionships |
|---------|-----------------------|----------|--------------------|
| 1       | 14.35                 | 16.42    | 15.79              |
| 2       | 17.36                 | 18.13    | 14.26              |
| 3       | 19.01                 | 19.95    | 18.37              |
| 4       | 27.90                 | 17.78    | 15.12              |
| 5       | 17.67                 | 16.96    | 17.17              |
| 6       | 17.83                 | 16.15    | 15.30              |
| 7       | 16.30                 | 19.44    | 15.63              |
| 8       | 28.00                 | 16.23    | 15.69              |
| 9       | 18.27                 | 15.76    | 15.65              |
| 10      | 17.00                 | 16.18    | 14.99              |
| 11      | 17.10                 | 13.89    | 15.83              |
| 12      | 18.94                 | 14.83    | 14.77              |

We rank all of these time measures by determining the fastest time, then the next to fastest time, etcetera, until the slowest time. But because the data in each row belong together (we compare individuals with themselves), we do the ranking *row-wise*. For each athlete separately, we determine the fastest time (1), the next fastest time (2), and the slowest time (3) and put the ranks in a table.

---

set is too small to say anything about assumptions at the populationlevel. Residuals for a data set of 8 persons might show very nonnormal residuals, or very different variances for two subgroups of 4 persons each, but that might just be a coincidence, a random result because of the small sample size. If in doubt, it is best to use nonparametric methods.

Table 12.2: Row-wise ranks of the speedskating data.

| athlete | EuropeanChampionships | Olympics | WorldChampionships |
|---------|-----------------------|----------|--------------------|
| 1       | 1.00                  | 3.00     | 2.00               |
| 2       | 2.00                  | 3.00     | 1.00               |
| 3       | 2.00                  | 3.00     | 1.00               |
| 4       | 3.00                  | 2.00     | 1.00               |
| 5       | 3.00                  | 1.00     | 2.00               |
| 6       | 3.00                  | 2.00     | 1.00               |
| 7       | 2.00                  | 3.00     | 1.00               |
| 8       | 3.00                  | 2.00     | 1.00               |
| 9       | 3.00                  | 2.00     | 1.00               |
| 10      | 3.00                  | 2.00     | 1.00               |
| 11      | 3.00                  | 1.00     | 2.00               |
| 12      | 3.00                  | 2.00     | 1.00               |

From this table we see for example that athlete 1 had the fastest time on the European Championships (14.35, rank 1) and the slowest at the Olympics (16.42, rank 3).

Next we compute the sum of the ranks column-wise: the sum of the ranks for the European Championships data is 31, for the Olympic data it's 26 and for the World Championships data it is 15.

From these sums we can gather that in general, these athletes showed their best times (many rank 1s) at the World Championships, as the sum of the ranks is lowest. We also see that in general these athletes showed their worst times (many rank 2s and 3s) at the European Championships, as the relevant column showed the highest sum of ranks.

In order to know whether these sums of ranks are significantly different from each other, we may compute an  $F_r$ -value based on the following formula:

$$F_r = \left[ \frac{12}{Nk(k+1)} \sum_{j=1}^k S_j^2 \right] - 3N(k+1) \quad (12.1)$$

In this formula,  $N$  stands for the number of rows (12 athletes),  $k$  stands for the number of columns (3 occasions), and  $S_j^2$  stands for the squared sum of column  $j$  ( $31^2$ ,  $26^2$  and  $15^2$ ). If we fill in these numbers, we get:

$$\begin{aligned} F_r &= \left[ \frac{12}{12 \times 3(3+1)} \times (31^2 + 26^2 + 15^2) \right] - 3 \times 12(3+1) \\ &= \left[ \frac{12}{144} \times 1862 \right] - 144 = 11.17 \end{aligned}$$

What can we tell from this  $F_r$ -statistic? In order to say something about significance, we have to know what values are to be expected under the null-hypothesis that there are no differences across the three groups of data. Suppose

we randomly mixed up the data by taking all the speedskating times and randomly assigning them to the three contests and the twelve athletes, until we have a newly filled datamatrix in Table 12.3:

Table 12.3: The raw skating data in random order.

| athlete | EuropeanChampionships | Olympics | WorldChampionships |
|---------|-----------------------|----------|--------------------|
| 1       | 18.37                 | 15.79    | 17.83              |
| 2       | 15.12                 | 14.83    | 17.67              |
| 3       | 14.35                 | 14.99    | 15.63              |
| 4       | 14.26                 | 17.00    | 17.36              |
| 5       | 19.01                 | 16.30    | 17.17              |
| 6       | 16.23                 | 15.30    | 14.77              |
| 7       | 15.83                 | 15.69    | 27.90              |
| 8       | 15.76                 | 19.44    | 13.89              |
| 9       | 15.65                 | 18.27    | 16.18              |
| 10      | 28.00                 | 17.78    | 16.15              |
| 11      | 19.95                 | 16.42    | 17.10              |
| 12      | 18.13                 | 16.96    | 18.94              |

If we then compute  $F_r$  for these mixed up data, we get another value. If we do this say 1000 times, we get the following values for  $F_r$ , summarized in the histogram in Figure 12.4.

So if the data is just randomly distributed over the three columns in the data matrix, we expect no systematic differences and so the null-hypothesis is true. So now we know what the distribution of  $F_r$  looks like when the null-hypothesis is true. Remember that for the true data that we actually gathered, we found an  $F_r$ -value of 11.17. From the histogram, we see that only very few values of 11.17 or larger are observed when the null-hypothesis is true. If we look more closely, we find that only 0.4% of the values are larger than 11.17, so we have a  $p$ -value of 0.004. The 95th percentile of these 1000  $F_r$ -values is 5.1666667, meaning that of the 1000 values for  $F_r$ , 5% are larger than 5.1666667. So if we use a significance level of 5%, our observed value of 11.17 is larger than the critical value for  $F_r$ , and we conclude that the null-hypothesis can be rejected.

Now this  $p$ -value of 0.004 and the critical value of 5.1666667 are based on our own computations. Actually there are better ways. One is to look up critical values of  $F_r$  in tables, for instance in Kendall M.G. (1970) *Rank correlation methods*. (fourth edition). The  $p$ -value corresponding to this  $F_r$ -value depends on  $k$ , the number of groups of data (here 3 columns) and  $N$ , the number of rows (12 individuals). If we look up that table, we find that for  $k = 3$  and  $N = 12$  the critical value of  $F_r$  for a type I error rate of 0.05 equals 6.17. Our observed  $F_r$ -value of 11.17 is larger than that, therefore we can reject the null-hypothesis that the median skating times are the same at the three different championships. So we have to tell your friend that there are general differences in skating times at different contests,  $F_r = 11.17, p < 0.05$ , but it is not the case that the fastest times were observed at the Olympics.

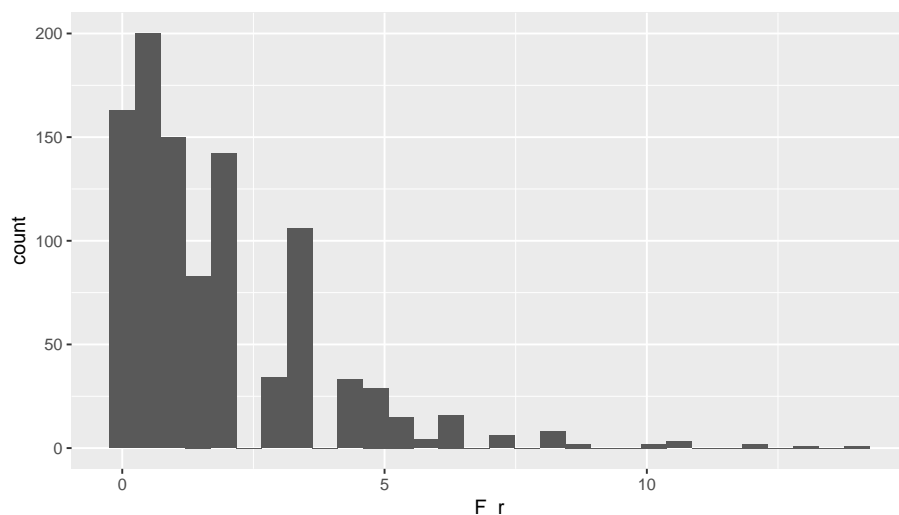


Figure 12.4: Histogram of 1000 possible values for  $F_r$  given that the null-hypothesis is true, for 12 speedskaters.

Another way is to make an approximation of the distribution of  $F_r$ . Note that the distribution in the histogram is very strangely shaped. The reason is that the data set is quite limited. Suppose we have not data on 12 speedskaters, but on 120. If we then randomly mix up data again and compute 1000 different values for  $F_r$ , we get the histogram in Figure 12.5.

The shape becomes more regular. It also starts to resemble another distribution, that of the  $\chi^2$  (chi-square). It can be shown that the distribution of the  $F_r$  for a large number of rows in the data matrix, and at least 6 columns, approaches the shape of the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with  $k - 1$  degrees of freedom. This is shown in Figure 12.6.

The line of the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with 2 degrees of freedom approaches the histogram quite well, but not perfectly. In general, for large  $N$  and  $k > 5$ , the approximation is good enough. In that way it gets easier to look up  $p$ -values for certain  $F_r$ -values, because the  $\chi^2$ -distribution is well-known<sup>2</sup>, so we don't have to look up critical values for  $F_r$  in old tables. For a significance level of 5%, the critical value of a  $\chi^2$  with 2 degrees of freedom is 5.991. This is close to the value in the table for  $F_r$  in old books: 6.17. The part of the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with 2 degrees of freedom that is larger than the observed 11.17 is 0.0037537, so our approximate  $p$ -value for our null-hypothesis is 0.004.

<sup>2</sup>The  $\chi^2$ -distribution is based on the normal distribution: the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with  $k$  degrees of freedom is the distribution of a sum of the squares of  $k$  independent standard normal random variables.

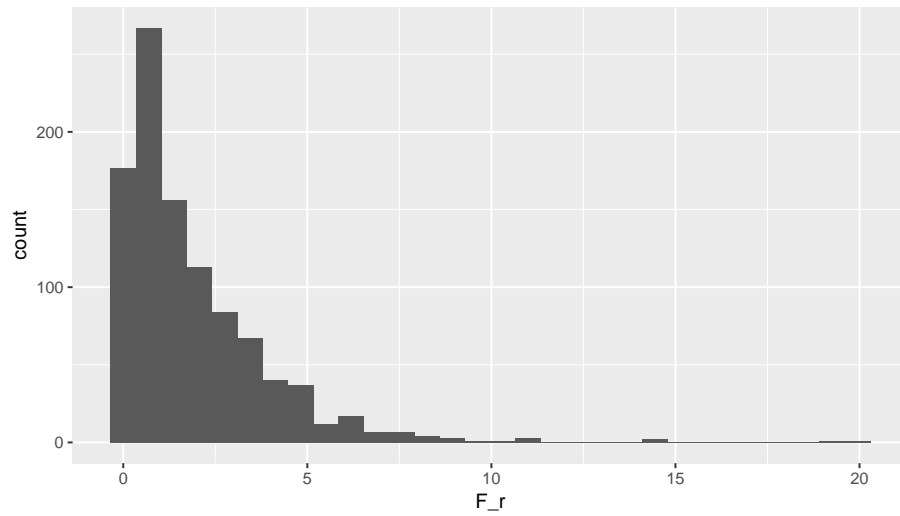


Figure 12.5: Histogram of 1000 possible values for  $F_r$  given that the null-hypothesis is true, for 120 speedskaters.

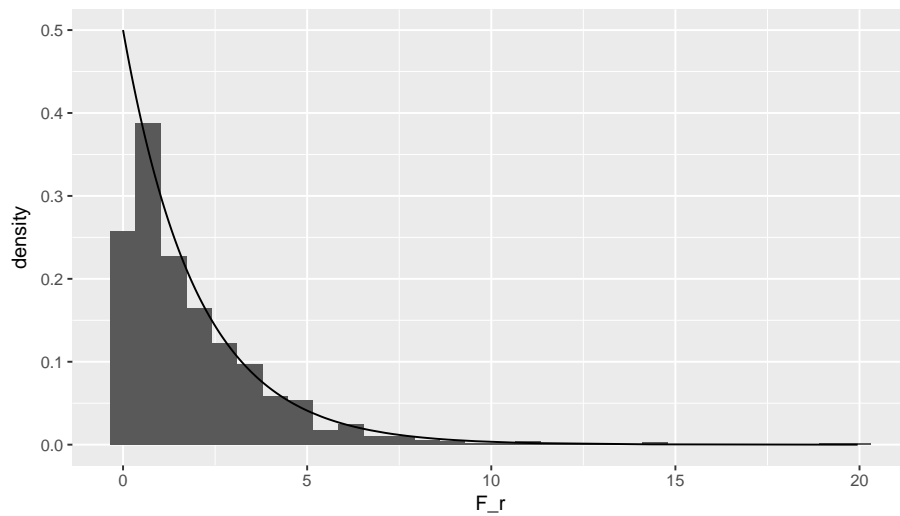


Figure 12.6: The distribution of  $F_r$  under the null-hypothesis, overlain with a chi-square distribution with 2 degrees of freedom.

## 12.3 How to perform Friedman's test in SPSS

First of all, you need data in wide format. If your data happens to be in long format, use the CASETOVARS procedure to get the data in wide format. CASETOVARS requires your data to be ordered, so use the SORT CASE BY procedure before CASETOVARS. Suppose your data is in long format, as in Table 12.4.

Table 12.4: The raw skating data in long data format.

| athlete | occasion | time  |
|---------|----------|-------|
| 1       | 1.00     | 14.35 |
| 1       | 2.00     | 16.42 |
| 1       | 3.00     | 15.79 |
| 2       | 1.00     | 17.36 |
| 2       | 2.00     | 18.13 |
| 2       | 3.00     | 14.26 |

Then the following syntax turns the data into wide format:

```
SORT CASES BY athlete occasion.  
CASESTOVARS  
  /ID=athlete  
  /INDEX=occasion  
  /GROUPBY=VARIABLE  
  /SEPARATOR = "_".
```

This creates the wide format data matrix in Table 12.5:

Table 12.5: The raw skating data in wide data format after CASESTOVARS

| athlete | time_1.00 | time_2.00 | time_3.00 |
|---------|-----------|-----------|-----------|
| 1       | 14.35     | 16.42     | 15.79     |
| 2       | 17.36     | 18.13     | 14.26     |
| 3       | 19.01     | 19.95     | 18.37     |
| 4       | 27.90     | 17.78     | 15.12     |
| 5       | 17.67     | 16.96     | 17.17     |
| 6       | 17.83     | 16.15     | 15.30     |
| 7       | 16.30     | 19.44     | 15.63     |
| 8       | 28.00     | 16.23     | 15.69     |
| 9       | 18.27     | 15.76     | 15.65     |
| 10      | 17.00     | 16.18     | 14.99     |
| 11      | 17.10     | 13.89     | 15.83     |
| 12      | 18.94     | 14.83     | 14.77     |

Note the variable names: they start with the dependent variable time and are then indexed by the number of the occasion, 1.00, 2.00 and 3.00, that re-

late to European Championships, Olympic Games and World Championships, respectively.

We can then specify that we want Friedman's test by using the NPAR TESTS procedure with the FRIEDMAN subcommand and indicating which variables we want to use:

```
NPAR TESTS
/FRIEDMAN=time_1.00 time_2.00 time_3.00.
```

| Ranks           |           |
|-----------------|-----------|
|                 | Mean Rank |
| time_1.00: time | 2.58      |
| time_2.00: time | 1.25      |
| time_3.00: time | 2.17      |

| Test Statistics |        |
|-----------------|--------|
| N               | 12     |
| Chi-Square      | 11.167 |
| df              | 2      |
| Asymp. Sig.     | .004   |

Figure 12.7: SPSS output of the Friedman test.

In the output in Figure 12.7 you first see the mean ranks. Note that if you multiply these by 12 (the number of rows), you get the sum of the ranks per column that we also computed above. Next you see a chi-square statistic, degrees of freedom, and an asymptotic  $p$ -value (Asymp. Sig.). Why don't we see an  $F_r$ -statistic?

The reason is, as discussed in the previous section, that for large number of measurements (columns) and a large number of individuals (rows), the  $F_r$  statistic tends to behave like a chi-square,  $\chi^2$ , with  $k - 1$  degrees of freedom. So what we are looking at in this output is really an  $F_r$ -value of 11.17 (exactly the same value as we computed by hand in the previous section). In order to approximate the  $p$ -value, this value of 11.17 is interpreted as a chi-square ( $\chi^2$ ), which with 2 degrees of freedom has a  $p$ -value of 0.004.

This asymptotic (approximated)  $p$ -value is the correct  $p$ -value if you have a lot of rows (large  $N$ ) and at least 6 variables ( $k > 5$ ). If you do not have that, as we have here, this asymptotic  $p$ -value is only what it is: an approximation. If you want to have the exact  $p$ -value, then do

```
NPAR TESTS
```

```
/FRIEDMAN=time_1.00 time_2.00 time_3.00
/METHOD=EXACT.
```

and then use the  $p$ -value under *exactsign.*, in this case 0.002, see Figure 12.8.

| Ranks           |           |
|-----------------|-----------|
|                 | Mean Rank |
| time_1.00: time | 2.58      |
| time_2.00: time | 1.25      |
| time_3.00: time | 2.17      |

| Test Statistics   |        |
|-------------------|--------|
| N                 | 12     |
| Chi-Square        | 11.167 |
| df                | 2      |
| Asymp. Sig.       | .004   |
| Exact Sig.        | .002   |
| Point Probability | .001   |

Figure 12.8: SPSS output of the Friedman test with the exact  $p$ -value.

Thus, a Friedman's test of equal medians showed that speedskaters show significantly different median times on the 10 kilometer distance at the three types of contests,  $F_r = 11.17, p = 0.002$ .

## 12.4 Wilcoxon's signed ranks test for 2 measures

Friedman's test can be used for 2 measures, 3 measures or even 10 measures. As stated earlier, the well-known Wilcoxon's test can only be used for 2 measures. For completeness, we also discuss that test here.

For each athlete, we take the difference in skating times and call it  $d$ , see Table 12.6. Next we rank these  $d$ -values, irrespective of sign, and call these ranks  $rank_d$ . From the table ?? we see that athlete 12 shows the smallest difference in skating times ( $d = 0.06$ , rank = 1) and athlete 2 the largest difference.

Next we indicate for each rank whether it belongs to a positive or a negative difference  $d$  and call that variable **ranksign**.

Under the null-hypothesis, we expect that some of the larger  $d$ -values are positive and some of them negative, in a fairly equal amount. If we sum the ranks having plus-signs and sum the ranks having minus-signs, we would expect



Table 12.6: The raw skating data and the computations for Wilcoxon signed ranks test

| athlete | Olympics | WorldChampionships | d     | rank_d | ranksign |
|---------|----------|--------------------|-------|--------|----------|
| 1       | 16.42    | 15.79              | 0.63  | 5.00   | 5.00     |
| 2       | 18.13    | 14.26              | 3.87  | 12.00  | 12.00    |
| 3       | 19.95    | 18.37              | 1.58  | 8.00   | 8.00     |
| 4       | 17.78    | 15.12              | 2.66  | 10.00  | 10.00    |
| 5       | 16.96    | 17.17              | -0.21 | 3.00   | -3.00    |
| 6       | 16.15    | 15.30              | 0.85  | 6.00   | 6.00     |
| 7       | 19.44    | 15.63              | 3.81  | 11.00  | 11.00    |
| 8       | 16.23    | 15.69              | 0.54  | 4.00   | 4.00     |
| 9       | 15.76    | 15.65              | 0.11  | 2.00   | 2.00     |
| 10      | 16.18    | 14.99              | 1.19  | 7.00   | 7.00     |
| 11      | 13.89    | 15.83              | -1.94 | 9.00   | -9.00    |
| 12      | 14.83    | 14.77              | 0.06  | 1.00   | 1.00     |

that these two sums are about equal, but only if the null-hypothesis is true. If the sums are very different, then we should reject this null-hypothesis. In order to see if the difference in sums is too large, we compute them as follows:

$$\begin{aligned}
 T^+ &= 5 + 12 + 8 + 10 + 6 + 11 + 4 + 2 + 7 + 1 = 66 \\
 T^- &= 3 + 9 = 12
 \end{aligned}$$

To know whether  $T^+$  is significantly larger than  $T^-$ , the value of  $T^+$  can be looked up in a table, for instance in Siegel & Castellan (1988). There we see that for  $T^+$ , with 12 rows, the probability of obtaining a  $T^+$  of at least 66 is 0.0171. For a two-sided test (if we would have switched the columns of the two championships, we would have gotten a  $T^-$  of 66 and a  $T^+$  of 12!), we have to double this probability. So we end up with a  $p$ -value of  $2 \times 0.0171 = 0.0342$ .

In the table we find no critical values for large sample size  $N$ , but fortunately, similar to the Friedman test, we use an approximation using the normal distribution. It can be shown that for large sample sizes, the statistic  $T^+$  is approximately normally distributed with mean

$$\mu = \frac{N(N+1)}{4} \quad (12.2)$$

and variance:

$$\sigma^2 = \frac{N(N+1)(2N+1)}{24} \quad (12.3)$$

If we therefore standardize the  $T^+$  by subtracting the  $\mu$  and then dividing by the square root of the variance  $\sqrt{(\sigma^2)} = \sigma$ , we get a  $Z$ -value with mean 0 and standard deviation 1. To do that, we use the following formula:

$$Z = \frac{T^+ - \mu}{\sigma} = \frac{T^+ - N(N+1)/4}{\sqrt{N(N+1)(2N+1)/24}} \quad (12.4)$$

Here  $T^+$  is 66 and  $N$  equals 12, so if we fill in the formula we get  $Z = 2.1180543$ . From the standard normal distribution we know that 5% of the observations lie above 1.96 and below -1.96. So a value for  $Z$  larger than 1.96 or smaller than -1.96 is enough evidence to reject the null-hypothesis. Here our  $Z$ -statistic is larger than 1.96, therefore we reject the null-hypothesis that the median skating times are the same at the World Championships and the Olympics. The  $p$ -value associated with a  $Z$ -score of 2.1180543 is 0.034.

## 12.5 How to perform Wilcoxon's signed ranks test in SPSS

If you want to use the Wilcoxon test, then use the following syntax:

```
NPART TESTS
/WILCOXON=time_2.00 time_3.00
/METHOD=EXACT.
```

In the output in Figure 12.9 we see a  $Z$ -statistic, an asymptotic  $p$ -value, and two exact  $p$ -values. The reason that we see a  $Z$ -statistic is that the Wilcoxon  $T^+$  statistic approaches a normal distribution in case we have a large number of observations (many rows). If  $N > 15$ , the approximation is good enough so that the statistic can be interpreted as a  $z$ -score (standardized score with a normal distribution). That means that a  $z$ -score of 1.96 or larger or -1.96 or smaller can be regarded as significant at the 5% significance level. Since the standard normal distribution is only an approximation, and we have  $N = 12$ , we have to look at the exact significance level, which is in this case 0.034. We see that the exact  $p$ -value is in this case equal to the approximate  $p$ -value. Note that we use a two-sided test, to allow for the fact that random sampling could lead to a higher median for the Olympic Games or a higher median for the World Championships. We just want to know whether the null-hypothesis that the two medians differ can be rejected (in whatever direction) or not.

Let's compare the output with the Friedman test, but then only use the relevant variables in your syntax:

```
NPART TESTS
/FRIEDMAN= time_2.00 time_3.00
/METHOD=EXACT.
```

In the output in Figure 12.10 we see that the null-hypothesis of equal medians at the World Championships and the Olympic Games can be rejected, with a  $p$ -value of 0.039.

| Ranks                                |                |                 |           |              |
|--------------------------------------|----------------|-----------------|-----------|--------------|
|                                      |                | N               | Mean Rank | Sum of Ranks |
| time_3.00: time -<br>time_2.00: time | Negative Ranks | 2 <sup>a</sup>  | 6.00      | 12.00        |
|                                      | Positive Ranks | 10 <sup>b</sup> | 6.60      | 66.00        |
|                                      | Ties           | 0 <sup>c</sup>  |           |              |
|                                      | Total          | 12              |           |              |

a. time\_3.00: time < time\_2.00: time

b. time\_3.00: time > time\_2.00: time

c. time\_3.00: time = time\_2.00: time

| Test Statistics        |  |
|------------------------|--|
|                        | time_3.00:<br>time - time_2.<br>00: time |
| Z                      | -2.118 <sup>b</sup>                      |
| Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed) | .034                                     |
| Exact Sig. (2-tailed)  | .034                                     |
| Exact Sig. (1-tailed)  | .017                                     |
| Point Probability      | .004                                     |

b. Based on negative ranks.

Figure 12.9: SPSS output of the Wilcoxon test.

Note that both the Friedman and Wilcoxon tests come up with very similar  $p$ -values. Their rationales are very similar: Friedman's test is based on ranks and Wilcoxon's test is based on positive and negative differences between measures 1 and 2, so in fact ranks 1 and 2 for each row in the data matrix. Both can therefore be used in the case you have two measures. We recommend to use the Friedman test, since that test can be used in all situations where you have 2 or more measures per row. Wilcoxon's test can only be used if you have 2 measures per row.

In sum, we can report in two ways on our hypothesis regarding similar skating times at the World Championships and at the Olympics:

1. A Friedman test showed a significant difference between the 10km skating times at the World Championships and at the Olympics,  $F_r = 5.33, p = 0.04$ . Athletes more often show their fastest times at the World Championships than can be expected due to chance.
2. A Wilcoxon signed ranks test showed a significant difference between the 10km skating times at the World Championships

| Ranks           |           |
|-----------------|-----------|
|                 | Mean Rank |
| time_2.00: time | 1.17      |
| time_3.00: time | 1.83      |

| Test Statistics   |       |
|-------------------|-------|
| N                 | 12    |
| Chi-Square        | 5.333 |
| df                | 1     |
| Asymp. Sig.       | .021  |
| Exact Sig.        | .039  |
| Point Probability | .032  |

Figure 12.10: SPSS output of the Friedman test for two measures.

and at the Olympics,  $Z = -2.12, p = 0.03$ . Athletes more often show their fastest times at the World Championships than can be expected due to chance.

How do we know that the fastest times were at the World Championships? If we look at raw data above, that does not seem that obvious. But this conclusion is based on the sum of ranks: we saw a sum of ranks of 26 for the Olympics and 15 for the World Championships. So the average rank is lower at the World Championships.

## 12.6 Ties

Many nonparametric tests are based on ranks. For example, if we have the data sequence 0.1, 0.4, 0.5, 0.2, we give these values the ranks 1, 3, 4, 2, respectively. But in many data cases, data sequences cannot be ranked unequivocally. Let's look at the sequence 0.1, 0.4, 0.4, 0.2. Here we have 2 values that are exactly the same. We say then that we have *ties*. If we have ties in our data like the 0.4 in this case, one very often used option is to arbitrarily choose one of the 0.4 values as smaller than the other, and then average the ranks. Thus, we rank the data into 1, 3, 4, 2 and then average the tied observations: 1, 3.5, 3.5, 2. As another example, suppose we have the sequence 23, 54, 54, 54, 19, we turn this into ranks 2, 3, 4, 5, 1 and take the average of the ranks of the tied observations of 54: 2, 4, 4, 4, 1. These ranks corrected for ties can then be used to compute the test statistic, for instance Friedman's  $F_r$  or Wilcoxon's  $Z$ . However, in many cases, because of these corrections, a slightly different formula is to be used. So the formulas become a little bit different. This is all

done in SPSS automatically. If you want to know more, see Siegel and Castellan (1988).

## 12.7 Exercises

A researcher is interested in the relationship between mood and day of the week: are people generally moodier on Monday than on Wednesday or Friday?

Below we see the data on 4 people that rated their mood from 1 (very moody) to 10 (not moody at all) on three separate days in a week in February: Day 1 is Monday, day 2 is Wednesday and day 3 is Friday:

| ID | Day | Mood |
|----|-----|------|
| 1  | 1   | 3    |
| 1  | 2   | 5    |
| 1  | 3   | 8    |
| 2  | 1   | 4    |
| 2  | 2   | 7    |
| 2  | 3   | 6    |
| 3  | 1   | 2    |
| 3  | 2   | 4    |
| 3  | 3   | 1    |
| 4  | 1   | 9    |
| 4  | 2   | 5    |
| 4  | 3   | 3    |

1. Put the data into wide format, and think of appropriate variable names

| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |

2. Rank these data row-wise: for each row determine the lowest mood (1), the second lowest mood (2) and the highest mood score (3)

|     |     |     |     |     |
|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ... | ... | ... |

- Determine the column sums: the sum of the ranks for Monday, Wednesday and Friday.
- How many rows do you have ( $N$ ) and how many columns of data do you have ( $k$ )?
- Compute  $F_r$ .
- Copy the data into SPSS and run a Friedman's test. Should you ask for an exact  $p$ -value? Provide the syntax.
- Suppose you get the SPSS output in Figure . What would your conclusion be regarding the research question about the relationship between moodiness and the day of the week?
- In this data set, for which day did we observe the personal best mood? How many of the individuals showed their best mood on that day?
- A linear mixed model was run on this data set. When checking model assumptions, we saw the following graphs in Figures ?? and 12.14.  
Would you prefer to stick to the Friedman's test for this data set, or would you prefer to report a linear mixed model? Explain your answer.
- Could you have performed a Wilcoxon test on these data? Why, or why not?

Answers:

- The raw data in wide format:

| ID | Mood_1 | Mood_2 | Mood_3 |
|----|--------|--------|--------|
| 1  | 3      | 5      | 8      |
| 2  | 4      | 7      | 6      |
| 3  | 2      | 4      | 1      |
| 4  | 9      | 5      | 3      |

| Ranks           |           |
|-----------------|-----------|
|                 | Mean Rank |
| Mood_1.00: Mood | 1.75      |
| Mood_2.00: Mood | 2.50      |
| Mood_3.00: Mood | 1.75      |

| Test Statistics   |       |
|-------------------|-------|
| N                 | 4     |
| Chi-Square        | 1.500 |
| df                | 2     |
| Asymp. Sig.       | .472  |
| Exact Sig.        | .653  |
| Point Probability | .222  |

Figure 12.11: SPSS output of a Friedman test.

| ID | Mood_1 | Mood_2 | Mood_3 |
|----|--------|--------|--------|
| 1  | 1      | 2      | 3      |
| 2  | 1      | 3      | 2      |
| 3  | 2      | 3      | 1      |
| 4  | 3      | 2      | 1      |

2. The row-wise ranked data:

3. Day 1: 7, Day 2: 10 and Day3: 7.

4.  $N = 4$  and  $k = 3$

5.

$$\begin{aligned}
 F_r &= \left[ \frac{12}{4 \times 3(3+1)} \times (7^2 + 10^2 + 7^2) \right] - 3 \times 4(3+1) \\
 &= \left[ \frac{12}{48} \times 198 \right] - 48 = 1.50
 \end{aligned}$$

6. NPAR TESTS

```

/FRIEDMAN= Mood_1 Mood_2 Mood_3
/METHOD=Exact.

```

7. We found no significant effect of day of the week on mood,  $F_r = 1.50, p = 0.65$ , so the null-hypothesis of equal mood during the week is not rejected. Note however that the sample size

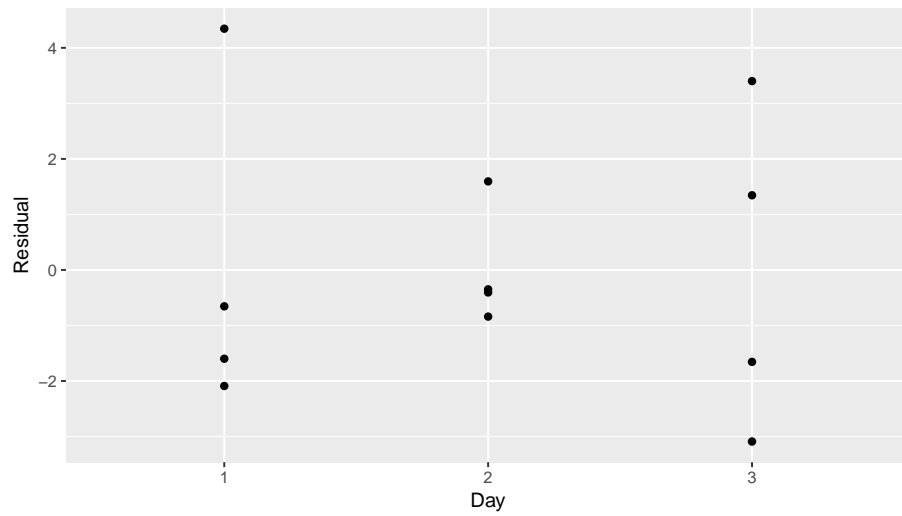


Figure 12.12: Residual plot after a linear mixed model analysis.

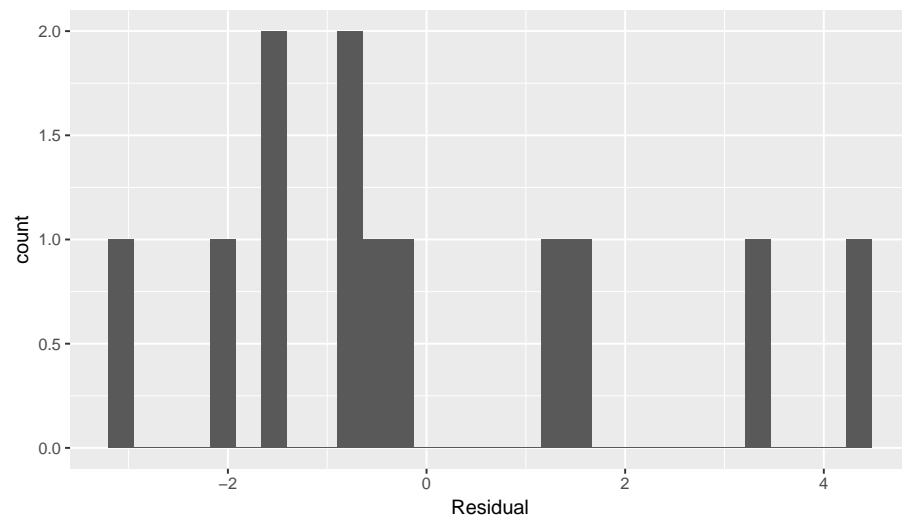


Figure 12.13: Residual plot after a linear mixed model analysis.



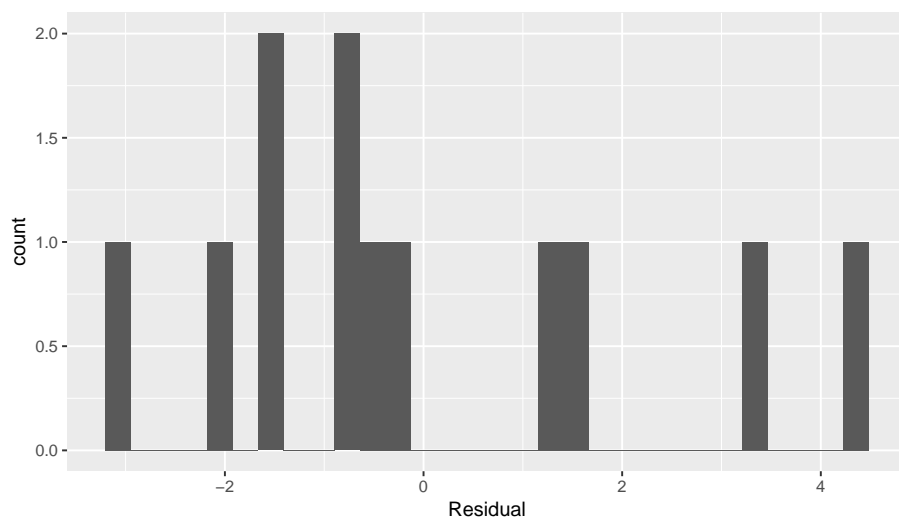


Figure 12.14: Histogram of residuals after a linear mixed model analysis.

was extremely small (12 data points), so even if there is a real relationship between mood and day of the week, there was little chance to find evidence of that in this data set.

8. The highest column sum of the ranks was found for day 2, which was Wednesday. So in this data set we saw that the four individuals generally showed their personal highest mood score on Wednesday. Actually, 2 persons out of 4 showed their highest score (rank 3) on Wednesday (ID=2 and ID=3).
9. The plots suggests that the variance of the residuals is very small for the second day, compared to the other two days. The distribution is also hardly normal. But it is hard to tell whether the assumptions are reasonable, since there are so few data points. It would therefore be safest to report a Friedman test.
10. A Wilcoxon test can only be performed on two measures, say Monday and Wednesday data, or Monday and Friday data. You could not test the null-hypothesis of the same moods on three days with a Wilcoxon test.

## Chapter 13

# Generalized linear models part I: logistic regression

### 13.1 Introduction

In previous chapters we were introduced to the linear model, with its basic form

$$y = b_0 + b_1X_1 + \dots + b_nX_n + e \quad (13.1)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (13.2)$$

Two basic assumptions of this model are the linearity in the parameters, and the normally distributed residual  $e$ . Linearity in the parameters means that the effects of intercept and the independent variables  $X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n$  are additive: the assumption is that you can sum these effects to come to a predicted value for  $y$ . So that is also true when we include interaction effects to account for moderation effects,

$$y = b_0 + b_1X_1 + b_2X_2 + b_3X_1X_2 + e \quad (13.3)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (13.4)$$

or when we use a quadratic term to account for other types of nonlinearity in the data:

$$y = b_0 + b_1X_1 + b_2X_1X_1 + e \quad (13.5)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (13.6)$$

In all these models, the assumption is that the effects of the parameters can be added to one another.

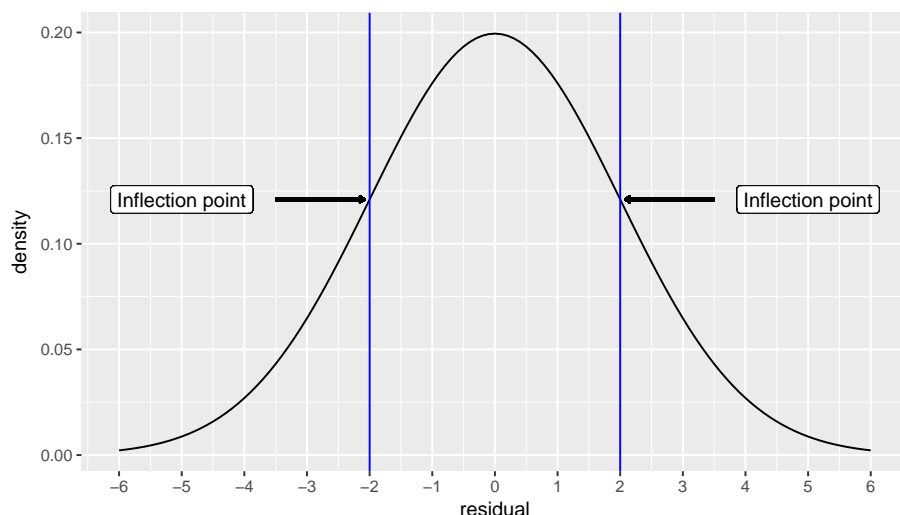


Figure 13.1: Density function of the normal distribution, with mean 0 and variance 4 (standard deviation 2). Inflection points are positioned at residual values of minus 1 standard deviation and plus 1 standard deviation.

The other major assumption of linear (mixed) models is the normal distribution of the residuals. As we have seen in for instance the previous chapter, sometimes the residuals are not normally distributed. Remember that with a normal distribution  $N(0, \sigma^2)$ , in principle all values between  $-\infty$  and  $+\infty$  are possible, but they tend to concentrate around the value of 0, in the shape of the bell-curve. Figure 13.1 shows the normal distribution  $N(0, \sigma^2 = 4)$ : it is centered around 0 and has variance 4. Note that the inflection point, that is the point where the decrease in density tends to decelerate, is exactly at the values -2 and +2. These are equal to the square root of the variance, which is the standard deviation,  $+\sigma$  and  $-\sigma$ .

A normal distribution is suitable for continuous data: for example a variable that can take all possible values between -1 and 0. For many variables this is not true. Think for example of temperature measures: if the thermometer gives degrees centigrade with a precision of only 1 decimal, we can never have values of say 10.07 or -56.789. Our data will in fact be *discrete*, showing rounded values like 10.1, 10.2, 10.3, but no values in between.

Nevertheless, the normal distribution can still be used in many such cases. Take for instance a data set where the temperature in Amsterdam in summer was predicted on the basis of a linear model. Fig 13.2 shows the distribution of the residuals of that model:

The temperature measures were discrete with a precision of one tenth of a degree centigrade, but the distribution seems well approximated by a normal curve.

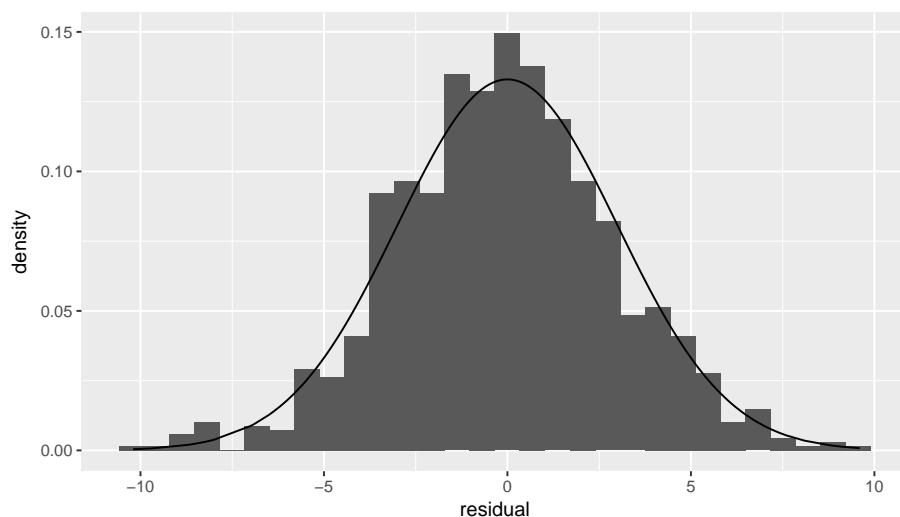


Figure 13.2: Even if residuals are really discrete, the normal distribution can be a good approximation of their distribution.

But let's look at an example where the discreteness is more prominent. In Figure 13.3 we see the residuals of an analysis of exam results. Students had to do an assignment that had to meet 4 criteria: 1) originality, 2) language, 3) structure, and 4) literature review. Each criterion was scored as either fulfilled (1) or not fulfilled (0). The score for the assignment was given on the basis of *the number of criteria* that were met, so the scores could be 0, 1, 2, 3 or 4. The score was predicted on the basis of the average exam score on previous assignments using a linear model.

Figure 13.3 shows that the residuals are very discrete, and that the continuous normal distribution is a very bad approximation of the histogram. We often see this phenomenon when our data consists of *counts* with a limited maximum number.

An even more extreme case we observe when our dependent variable consists of whether or not students passed the assignment: only those assignments that fulfilled all 4 criteria are regarded as sufficient. If we score all students with a sufficient assignment as passed (1) and all students with an insufficient assignment as failed (0) and we predict this again by the average exam score on previous assignments using a linear model, we get the residuals displayed in Figure 13.4.

Here it is definitely evident that a normal approximation of the residuals will not do. When the dependent variable has only 2 possible values, a linear model will never work because the residuals can never have a distribution that is even remotely looking normal.

In the coming two chapters we will discuss how generalized linear models

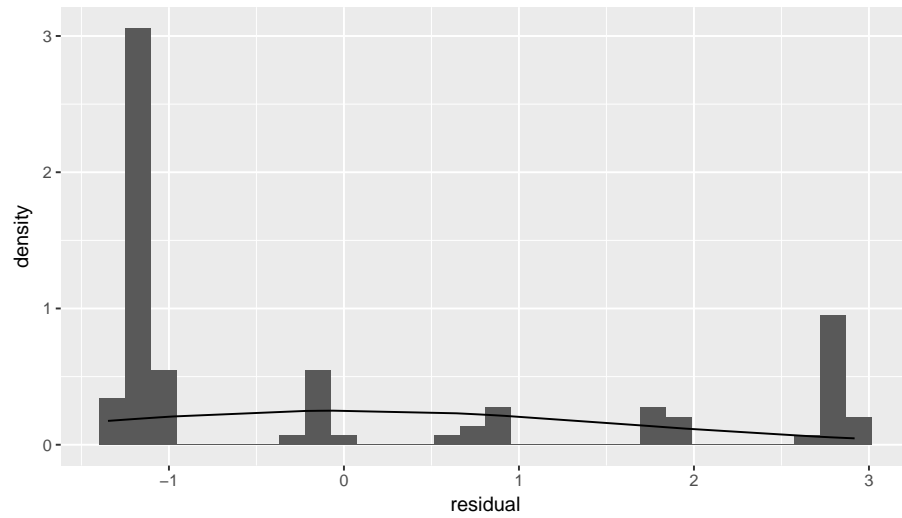


Figure 13.3: Count data example where the normal distribution is not a good approximation of the distribution of the residuals.

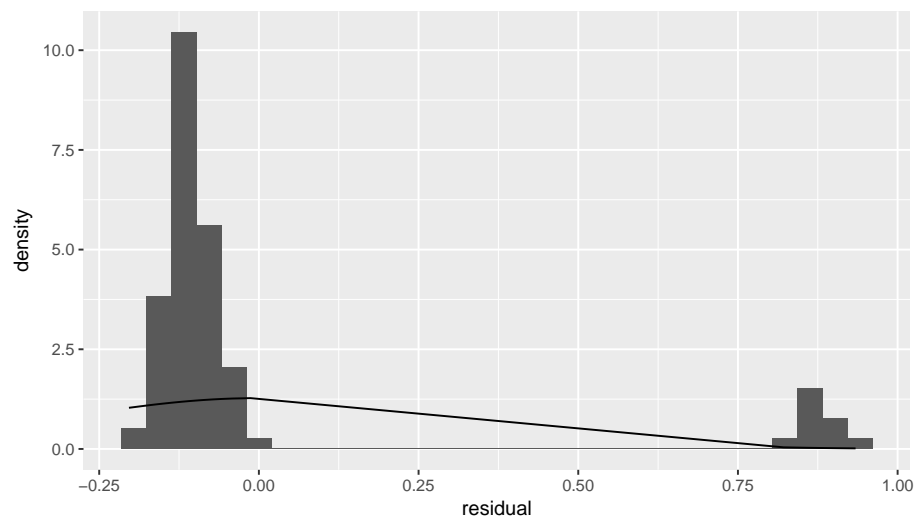


Figure 13.4: Dichotomous data example where the normal distribution is not a good approximation of the distribution of the residuals.

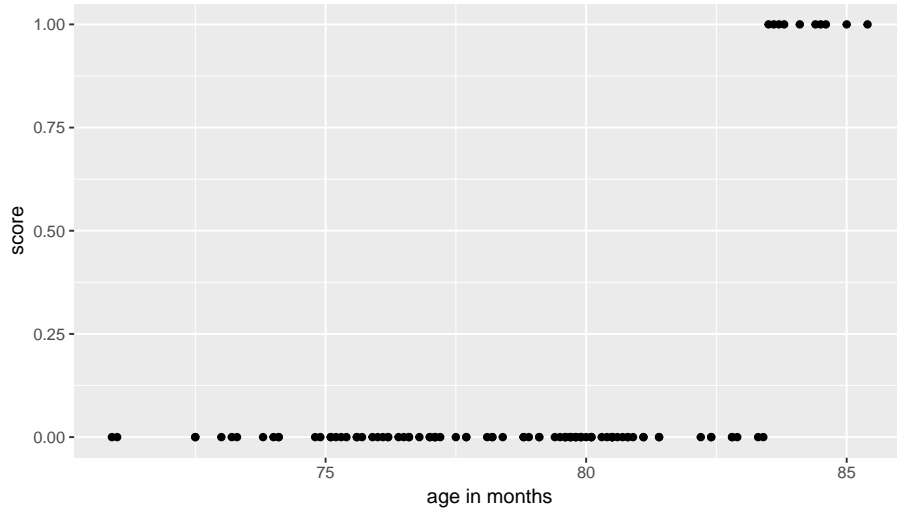


Figure 13.5: Data example: Exam outcome (score) as a function of age, where 1 means pass and 0 means fail.

can be used to analyze data sets where the assumption of normally distributed residuals is not tenable. First we discuss the case where the dependent variable has only 2 possible values (dichotomous dependent variables like yes/no or pass/fail, heads/tails, 1/0). In the next chapter, we will discuss the case where the dependent variable consists of counts (1, 2, 3, 4, ...).

## 13.2 Logistic regression

Imagine that we analyze results on an exam for third grade children. These children are usually either 6 or 7 years old, depending on what month they were born in. The exam is on February 1st. A researcher wants to know whether the age of the child can explain why some children pass the test and others fail. She computes the age of the child in months. Each child that passes the exam gets a score 1 and all the others get a score 0. Figure 13.5 plots the data.

She wants to use the following linear model:

$$score = b_0 + b_1 age + e \quad (13.7)$$

$$e \sim N(0, \sigma_e^2) \quad (13.8)$$

Figure 13.6 shows the estimated regression line and Figure 13.7 shows the distribution of the residuals as a function of age.

Clearly a linear model is not appropriate. Here, the assumption that the dependent variable, score in this case, is scattered randomly around the predicted value with a normal distribution is not reasonable. The main problem is

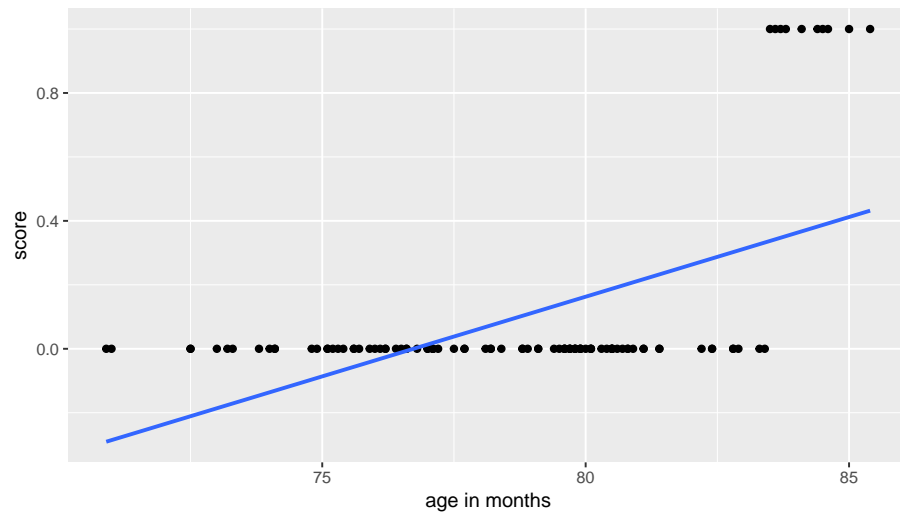


Figure 13.6: Example exam data with a linear regression line.

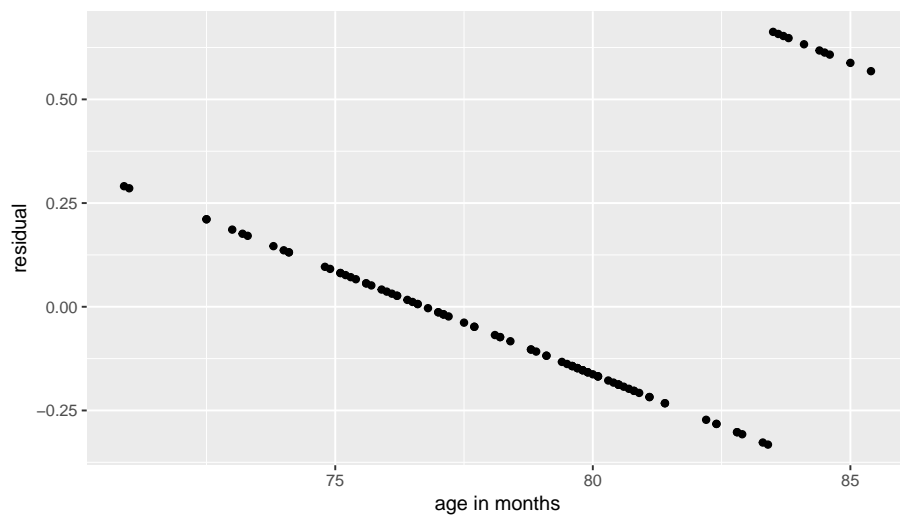


Figure 13.7: Residuals as a function of age, after a linear regression analysis of the exam data.

that the dependent variable score can only have 2 values: 0 and 1. When we have a dependent variable that is categorical, so not continuous, we generally use *logistic regression*. In this chapter we cover the case when the dependent variable takes binary values, like 0 and 1.

### 13.2.1 Bernoulli distribution

Rather than using a normal distribution, we could try a Bernoulli distribution. The Bernoulli distribution is the distribution of a coin flip. For example, if the probability of heads is 0.1, we can expect that if we flip the coin, on average we expect to see 0.1 times heads and 0.9 times tails. Our best bet then is that the outcome is tails. However, if we actually flip the coin, we might see heads anyway. There is some randomness to be expected. Let  $y$  be the outcome of a coin flip: heads or tails. If we have a Bernoulli distribution for variable  $y$  with probability  $p$  for heads, we *expect* to see heads  $p$  times, but we actually *observe* heads or tails.

$$y \sim \text{Bern}(n, p) \quad (13.9)$$

The same is true for the normal distribution in the linear model case: we *expect* that the observed value of  $y$  is exactly equal to its predicted value ( $b_0 + b_1X$ ), but we always *observe* that it is different.

$$y \sim N(\mu = b_0 + b_1X, \sigma_e^2) \quad (13.10)$$

In our example, the pass rate could also be conceived as the outcome of a coin flip: pass instead of heads and fail instead of tails. So would it be an idea to predict the *probability* of success on the basis of age? And then for every predicted probability, we allow for the fact that actually the observed success can differ. Our linear model could then look like this:

$$p_i = b_0 + b_1 \text{age}_i \quad (13.11)$$

$$\text{score}_i \sim \text{Bern}(p_i) \quad (13.12)$$

So for each child  $i$ , we predict the probability of success,  $p_i$ , on the basis of her/his age. Next, the randomness in the data comes from the fact that a probability is only a probability, so that the observed success of a child  $\text{score}_i$ , is like a coin toss with probability of  $p_i$  for success.

For example, suppose that we have a child with an age of 80 months, and we have  $b_0 = -3.8$  and  $b_1 = 0.05$ . Then the predicted probability  $p_i$  is equal to  $-3.8 + 0.05 \times 80 = 0.20$ . The best bet for such a child would be that it fails the exam. But 0.20 is only a probability, so by chance the child could pass the exam. This model also means that if we would have 100 children of age 80 months, we would *expect* that 20 of these children would pass the test and 80 would fail. But we can't make predictions for one individual alone: we don't know which child exactly will pass and which child won't. Note that this is similar to the



normally distributed residual in the linear model: in the linear model we expect a child to have a certain value for  $y$ , but we know that there will be a deviation from this predicted value: the residual. For a whole group of children with the same predicted value for  $y$ , we know that the whole group will show residuals that have a normal distribution. But we're not sure what the residual will be for each individual child.

Unfortunately, this model for probabilities is not very helpful. If we use a linear model for the probability, this means that we can predict probability values of less than 0 and more than 1, and this is not possible for probabilities. If we use the above values of  $b_0 = -3.8$  and  $b_1 = 0.05$ , we predict a probability of  $-0.3$  for a child of 70 months and a probability of  $1.2$  for a child of 100 months. Those values are meaningless!

### 13.2.2 Odds and logodds

Instead of predicting probabilities, we could predict *odds*. The nice property of odds is that they can have very large values, much larger than 1.

What are odds again? Odds are a different way of talking about probability. Suppose the probability of winning the lottery is 1%. Then the probability of loosing is 99%. This is equal to saying that the odds of winning against loosing are 1 to 99, or  $1 : 99$ , because the probability of success is 99 times smaller than the probability of loosing.

As another example, suppose the probability of being alive tomorrow is equal to 0.9999. Then the probability of not being alive tomorrow is  $1 - 0.9999 = 0.0001$ . Then the probability of being alive tomorrow is  $0.9999/0.0001 = 9999$  times larger than the the probability of not being alive. Therefore the odds of being alive tomorrow against being dead is 9999 to 1 (9999:1).

If we have a slightly biased coin, the probability of heads might be 0.6. The probability of tails is then 0.4. Then the probability of heads is then 1.5 times larger than the probability of tails ( $0.6/0.4=1.5$ ). So the odds of heads against tails is then 1.5 to 1. For the sake of clarity, odds are often multiplied by a constant to get integers, so we can also say the odds of heads against tails are 3 to 2. Similarly, if the probability of heads were 0.61, the odds of heads against tails would be 0.61 to 0.39, which can be modified into 61 to 39.

Now that we know how to go from probability statements to statements about odds, how do we go from odds to probability? If someone says the odds of heads against tails is 10 to 1, this means that for every 10 heads, there will be 1 tails. In other words, if there were 11 coin tosses, 10 would be heads and 1 would be tails. We can therefore transform odds back to probabilities by noting that 10 out of 11 coin tosses is heads, so  $10/11 = 0.91$ , and 1 out of 11 is tails, so  $1/11 = 0.09$ .

If someone says the odds of winning a gold medal at the Olympics is a thousand to one (1000:1), this means that if there were  $1000 + 1 = 1001$  opportunities, there would be a gold medal in 1000 cases and failure in only one. This corresponds to a probability of  $1000/1001$  for winning and  $1/1001$  for failure.

As a last example, if at the horse races, the odds of Bruno winning against Sacha are four to five (4:5), this means that for every 4 winnings by Bruno, there would be 5 winnings by Sacha. So out of a total of 9 winnings, 4 will be by Bruno and 5 will be by Sacha. The probability of Bruno outrunning Sacha is then  $4/9 = 0.44$ .

If we would summarize the odds by doing the division, we have just one number. For example, if the odds are 4 to 5 (4:5), the odds are  $4/5 = 0.8$ , and if the odds are a thousand to one (1000:1), then we can also say the odds are 1000. Odds, unlike probabilities, can have values that are larger than 1.

However, note that odds can never be negative: a very small odds is one to a thousand (1:1000). This can be summarized as an odds of 0.000999001, but that is still larger than 0. In summary: probabilities range from 0 to 1, and odds from 0 to infinity.

Because odds can never be negative, mathematicians have proposed to use the *natural logarithm*<sup>1</sup> of the odds as the preferred transformation of probabilities. For example, suppose we have a probability of heads of 0.42. This can be transformed into an odds by noting that in 100 coin tosses, we would expect 42 times heads and 58 times tails. So the odds are 42:58, which is equal to  $\frac{42}{58} = 0.7241379$ . The *natural logarithm* of 0.7241379 equals -0.3227734 (use the *ln* button on your calculator!). If we have a value between 0 and 1 and we take the logarithm of that value, we always get a value smaller than 0. In short: a probability is never negative, but the corresponding logarithm of the odds can be negative.

Figure 13.8 shows the relationship between a probability (with values between 0 and 1) and the natural logarithm of the corresponding odds (the *logodds*). The result is a mirrored S-shaped curve on its side. For large probabilities close to one, the equivalent logodds becomes infinitely positive, and for very small probabilities close to zero, the equivalent logodds becomes infinitely negative. A logodds of 0 is equal to a probability of 0.5. If a logodds is larger than 0, it means the probability is larger than 0.5, and if a logodds is smaller than 0 (negative), the probability is smaller than 0.5.

In summary, if we use a linear model to predict probabilities, we have the problem of predicted probabilities smaller than 0 and larger than 1 that are meaningless. If we use a linear model to predict odds we have the problem of predicted odds smaller than 0 that are meaningless: they are impossible! If on the other hand we use a linear model to predict *the natural logarithm of odds* (logodds), we have no problem whatsoever. We therefore propose to use a linear model to predict *logodds*: the natural logarithm of the odds that correspond to

---

<sup>1</sup>The natural logarithm of a number is its logarithm to the base of the constant  $e$ , where  $e$  is approximately equal to 2.7. The natural logarithm of  $x$  is generally written as  $\ln x$  or  $\log^e x$ . The natural logarithm of  $x$  is the power to which  $e$  needs to be raised to equal  $x$ . For example,  $\ln(2)$  is 0.69, because  $e^{0.69} = 2$ , and  $\ln(0.2) = -1.6$  because  $e^{-1.6} = 0.2$ . The natural logarithm of  $e$  itself,  $\ln(e)$ , is 1, because  $e^1 = e$ , while the natural logarithm of 1,  $\ln(1)$ , is 0, since  $e^0 = 1$ .

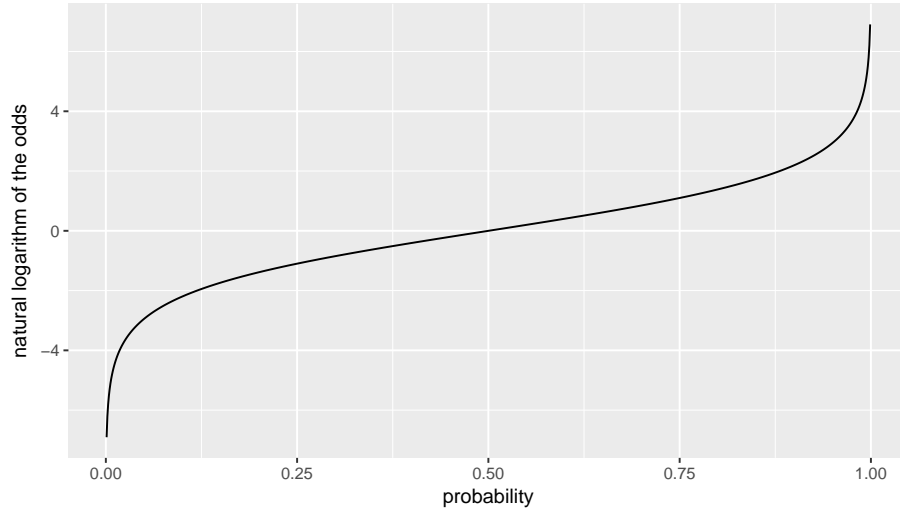


Figure 13.8: The relationship between a probability and the natural logarithm of the corresponding odds.

a particular probability.

Returning back to our example of the children passing the exam, suppose we have the following linear equation for the relationship between age and the logarithm of the odds of passing the exam

$$\text{logodds} = -3.82 + 0.05\text{age},$$

This equation predicts that a child aged 70 months has a logodds of  $-3.82 + 0.05 \times 70 = -0.34$ . In order to transform that logodds back to a probability, we first have to take the exponential of the logodds<sup>2</sup> to get the odds:

$$\text{odds} = \exp(\text{logodds}) = e^{\text{logodds}} = e^{-0.34} = 0.71$$

An odds of 0.71 means that the odds of passing the exam is 0.71 to 1 (0.71:1). So out of  $1 + 0.71 = 1.71$  times, we expect 0.71 successes and 1 failure. The probability of success is therefore  $\frac{0.71}{1+0.71} = 0.42$ . Thus, based on this equation, the expected probability of passing the exam for a child of 70 months equals 0.42.

---

<sup>2</sup>If we know  $\ln(x) = 60$ , we have to infer that  $x$  equals  $e^{60}$ , because  $\ln(e^{60}) = 60$  by definition of the natural logarithm, see previous footnote. Therefore, if we know that  $\ln(x) = c$ , we know that  $x$  equals  $e^c$ . The exponent of  $c$ ,  $e^c$ , is often written as  $\exp(c)$ . So if we know that the logarithm of the odds equals  $c$ ,  $\text{logodds} = \ln(\text{oddsratio}) = c$ , then the odds is equal to  $\exp(c)$ .

If you find that easier, you can also memorize the following formula for the relationship between a logodds of  $x$  and the corresponding probability:

$$p_x = \frac{\exp(x)}{1 + \exp(x)} \quad (13.13)$$

Thus, if you have a logodds  $x$  of  $-0.34$ , the odds equals  $\exp(-0.34) = 0.71$ , and the corresponding probability is  $\frac{0.71}{1+0.71} = 0.42$ .

### 13.2.3 Exercises

From probability to logodds:

Given: In the Netherlands, 51% of the inhabitants is female.

1. If we randomly pick someone from this Dutch population, what is the probability that that person is female?
2. If we randomly pick someone from this Dutch population, what are the odds that that person is female over being male? ( : )
3. If we randomly pick someone from this Dutch population, what are the odds that that person is male over being female? ( : )
4. What is the odds of randomly picking an inhabitant that is female, expressed as one number?
5. What is the odds of randomly picking an inhabitant that is male, expressed as one number?
6. What is the logodds of randomly picking an inhabitant that is female?
7. What is the logodds of randomly picking an inhabitant that is male?

Answers:

1. 0.51
2. 51 to 49 (51:49).
3. 49:51.
4.  $51/49=1.04$
5.  $49/51=0.96$
6.  $\ln(51/49) = \ln(1.04)=0.04$
7.  $\ln(49/51) = \ln(0.96)=-0.04$

From logodds to probabilities:

Given: In the Netherlands, 51% of the inhabitants are female. Females tend to get older than males, so if we predict sex by age, we should expect a higher probability of a female for older ages. Suppose we have the following linear model for the relationship between age (in years) and the logodds of being female:

$$\text{logodds}_{\text{female}} = -0.01 + 0.01 \times \text{age},$$

1. What is the predicted logodds of being female for a person of age 20?
2. What is the predicted logodds of being female for a person of age 90?
3. What is the predicted odds of being female for a person of age 20?
4. What is the predicted odds of being female for a person of age 90?
5. What are the predicted odds of being female for a person of age 20?
6. What are the predicted odds of being female against being male for a person of age 90?
7. What is the predicted probability of being female against being male for a person of age 20?
8. What is the predicted probability of being female for a person of age 90?
9. What is the predicted probability of being MALE for a person of age 90?

Answers:

1.  $-0.01 + 0.01 \times 20 = 0.19$
2.  $-0.01 + 0.01 \times 90 = 0.89$
3.  $\exp(0.19) = 1.21$
4.  $\exp(0.89) = 2.44$
5. 1.21 to 1, or 1.21:1
6. 2.44 to 1, or 2.44:1
7.  $1.21 / (1.21 + 1) = 0.55$
8.  $2.44 / (2.44 + 1) = 0.71$
9.  $1 - 0.71 = 0.29$

A big data analyst constructs a model that predicts whether an account on Twitter belongs to either a real person or organisation, or to a bot.

1. For one account, a user of this model finds an logodds of 4.5 that the account belongs to a bot. What is the corresponding probability that the twitter account belongs to a bot? Give the calculation.
2. For a short tweet with only a hyperlink, the probability that it comes from a bot is only 10%. What is the logodds that corresponds to this probability? Give the calculation.

Answers:

1. The logodds is 4.5, so the oddsratio is  $\exp(4.5)=90.0$ . The odds of being a bot is then 90:1. The probability of being a bot is  $90/(90+1)=0.99$
2. Out of 100 tweets with only a hyperlink, 10 are by bots and 90 are by real persons or organisations. So the odds of coming from a bot are 10:90. The odds is therefore  $10/90 = 0.11$ . When we take the natural logarithm of this odds, we get the logodd:  $\ln(0.11) = -2.21$ .

### 13.2.4 Logistic link function

In previous pages we have seen that logodds have the nice property of having meaningful values between  $-\infty$  and  $+\infty$ . This makes them suitable for linear models. In essence, our linear model for our exam data in children might then look like this:

$$\text{logodds}_{pass} = b_0 + b_1 \text{age} \quad (13.14)$$

$$y \sim \text{Bern}(p_{pass}) \quad (13.15)$$

Note that we can write the odds as  $p/(1-p)$ ,  $p$  is a probability (or a proportion). So the logodds that corresponds to the probability of passing the exam,  $p_{pass}$ , can be written as  $\ln \frac{p_{pass}}{1-p_{pass}}$ , so that we have

$$\ln \frac{p_{pass}}{1-p_{pass}} = b_0 + b_1 \text{age} \quad (13.16)$$

$$y \sim \text{Bern}(p_{pass}) \quad (13.17)$$

Note that we do not have a residual anymore: the randomness around the predicted values is no longer modelled using a residual  $e$  that is normally distributed, but is now modelled by a  $y$ -variable with a Bernoulli distribution. Also note the strange relationship between the probability parameter  $p_{pass}$  for the Bernoulli distribution, and the dependent variable for the linear equation  $b_0 + b_1 \text{age}$ . The linear model predicts the logodds, but for the Bernoulli distribution, we use the probability. But it turns out that this model is very flexible and useful in many real-life problems. This model is often called a *logit* model: one often writes that the *logit of the probability* is predicted by a linear model.

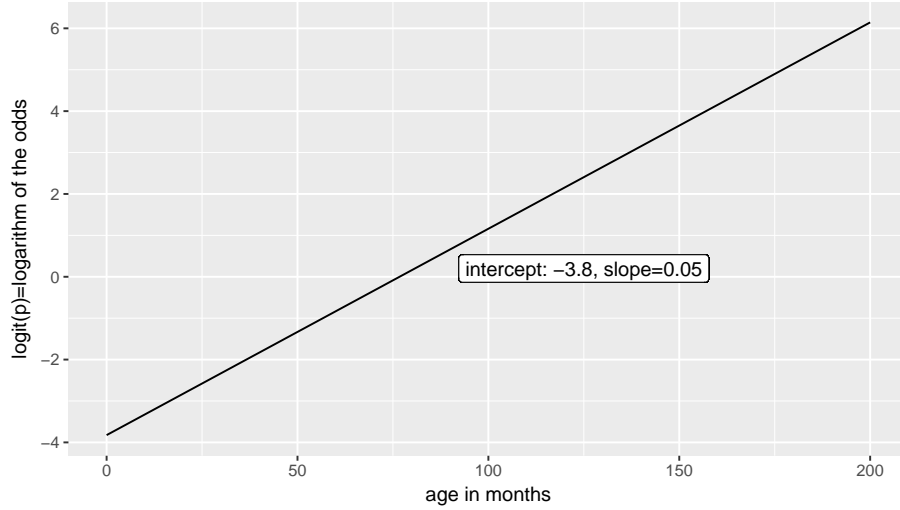


Figure 13.9: Example of a linear model for the logit of probabilities of passing an exam.

$$\text{logit}(p_{\text{pass}}) = b_0 + b_1 \text{age} \quad (13.18)$$

$$y \sim \text{Bern}(p_{\text{pass}}) \quad (13.19)$$

In essence, the logit function transforms a  $p$ -value into a logodds:

$$\text{logit}(p) = \ln\left(\frac{p}{1-p}\right) \quad (13.20)$$

So what does it look like, a linear model for logodds (or logits of probabilities)?

In Figure 13.9 we show a hypothetical example of a linear model for the logit of probabilities of passing an exam. These logits or logodds are predicted by age using a straight, linear regression line:

When we take all these predicted logodds and convert them back to probabilities, we obtain the plot in Figure 13.10. Note the change in the scale of the vertical axis, the rest of the plot is the same as in Figure 13.9.

Here again we see the S-shape relationship between probabilities and the logodds. We see that our model predicts probabilities close to 0 for very young ages, and probabilities close to 1 for very old ages. There is a clear positive effect of age on the probability of passing the exam. But note that the relationship is not linear on the scale of the probabilities: it is linear on the scale of the logit of the probabilities, see Figure 13.9!

The curvilinear shape we see in Figure 13.10 is called a *logistic* curve. It is based on the logistic function: here  $p$  is a logistic function of age (and note the similarity with Equation 13.13):

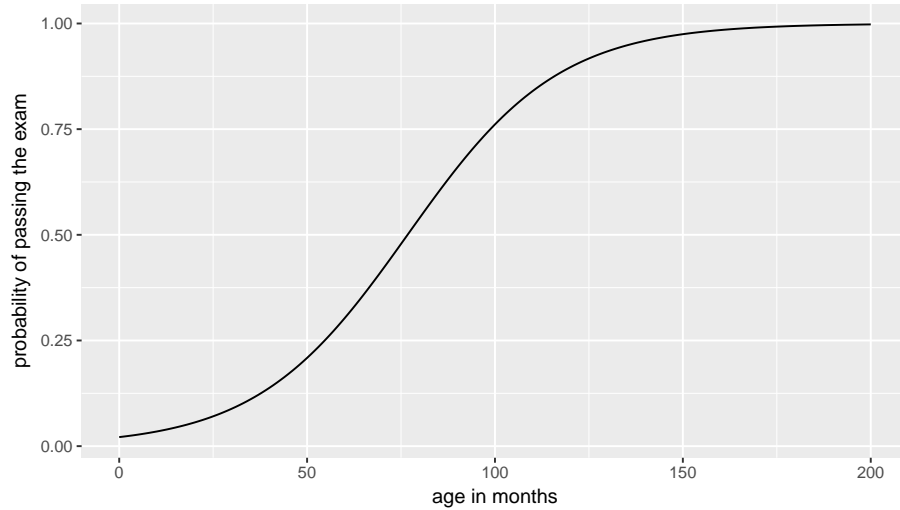


Figure 13.10: Example with logodds transformed into probabilities (vertical axis).

$$p = \text{logistic}(b_0 + b_1 \text{age}) = \frac{\exp(b_0 + b_1 \text{age})}{1 + \exp(b_0 + b_1 \text{age})} \quad (13.21)$$

In summary, if we go from logodds to probabilities, we use the logistic function,  $\text{logistic}(x) = \frac{\exp(x)}{1 + \exp(x)}$ . If we go from probabilities to logodds, we use the logit function,  $\text{logit}(p) = \ln \frac{p}{1-p}$ . The logistic regression model is a generalized linear model with a logit link function, because the linear equation  $b_0 + b_1 X$  predicts the logit of a probability. It is also often said that we're dealing with a logistic link function, because the linear equation gives a value that we have to subject to the logistic function to get the probability. Both terms, logit link function and logistic link function can be used.

If we go back to our data on the third-grade children that either passed or failed the exam, we see that this curve gives a description of our data, see Figure 13.11. The model predicts that around the age of 75 months, the probability of passing the exam is around 0.50. We indeed see in Figure 13.11 that some children pass the exam (score=1) and some don't (score=0). On the basis of this analysis there seems to be a positive relationship between age in third-grade children and the probability of passing the exam in this sample.

What we have done here is a *logistic regression* of passing the exam on age. It is called logistic because the curve in Figure 13.11 has a logistic shape. Logistic regression is one specific form of a *generalized linear model*. Here we have applied a generalized linear model with a so-called *logit link function*: instead of modelling dependent variable  $y$  directly, we have modelled *the logit of the probabilities of obtaining a  $y$ -value of 1*. There are many other link functions



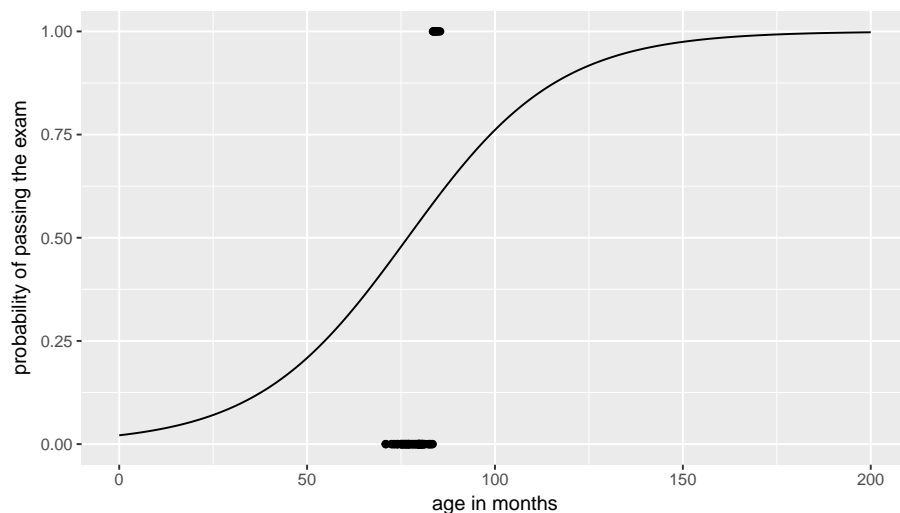


Figure 13.11: Transformed regression line and raw data points.

possible. One of them we will see in the section on generalized linear models for count data. But first, let's see how logistic regression can be performed in SPSS, and how we should interpret the output.

### 13.3 Logistic regression in SPSS

Imagine a data set on travellers from Amsterdam to Paris. From 1000 travellers, randomly sampled in 2017, we know whether they took the train to Paris, or whether they used other means of transportation. Of these travellers, we know their age, sex, yearly income, and whether they are travelling for business or not.

Part of the data are displayed in Table 13.1. A score of 1 on the variable **train** means they took the train, a score of 0 means they did not.

| train | age   | sex_male | income    | business |
|-------|-------|----------|-----------|----------|
| 1     | 35.12 | 1        | 7544.00   | 1        |
| 1     | 66.66 | 1        | 7096.00   | 0        |
| 0     | 42.77 | 1        | 29261.00  | 1        |
| 0     | 72.63 | 0        | 24977.00  | 0        |
| 1     | 76.25 | 0        | 876.00    | 1        |
| 0     | 19.87 | 1        | 126943.00 | 1        |

Suppose we want to know what kind of people are more likely to take the

train to Paris. We can use a logistic regression analysis to predict whether people take the train or not, on the basis of their age, sex, income, and main purpose of the trip.

Let's first see whether income predicts the probability of taking the train. The syntax for such a model involves the GENLIN procedure, which stands for GENeralized LINear model.

```
GENLIN train (REFERENCE=FIRST) WITH income
      /MODEL income
      DISTRIBUTION=BINOMIAL LINK=LOGIT
      /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

Note the similarity with the GLM and MIXED procedures: start with the dependent variable (**train** in this case, with only two possible values) and then after the WITH word the variables that you'd like to treat quantitatively, here **income**. Under the MODEL subcommand we specify the model, here only a main effect of **income**. But further we have to specify that we want to use the Bernoulli distribution and a logit link function. So LINK=LOGIT, but why a binomial distribution? Well, a Bernoulli distribution (one coin flip) is only a special case of the Binomial distribution (the distribution of several coin flips). So here we use a binomial distribution for one coin flip, which is equivalent to a Bernoulli distribution. The last line indicates what type of output we want to see: case processing statistics, descriptives and the solution in terms of parameter estimates.

One very important part of the syntax is the (REFERENCE = FIRST) statement for the dependent variable. The default SPSS syntax uses (REFERENCE = LAST), so that's what you get when you do not specify this part. (REFERENCE = LAST) means that the reference category of the train variable is the last value. Since there are only two values, 0 and 1, the last value is equal to 1. In that case, SPSS will derive a model that predicts the logodds for NOT taking the train, since it estimates the effect of income on the dependent variable *relative to taking the train*. In our case, it makes more sense to derive a model for the logodds of taking the train. We want to predict logoddsratios for taking the train, so we need to specify that our first value, 0, is our reference category: (REFERENCE = FIRST).

In Figure 13.12 we see the parameter estimates from this generalized linear model run on the train data.

The parameter estimates table from a GENLIN analysis looks very much like that of the ordinary linear model and the linear mixed model. The only difference is that we no longer see *t*-statistics, but Wald Chi-Square statistics. This is because with logistic models, the ratio  $B/SE$  does not have a *t*-distribution. In ordinary linear models, the ratio  $B/SE$  has a *t*-distribution because in linear models, the variance of the residuals,  $\sigma_e^2$ , has to be estimated. If the residual variance was known,  $B/SE$  would have a standard normal distribution. In logistic models, there is no  $\sigma_e^2$  that needs to be estimated, so the ratio  $B/SE$

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |         |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|---------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |         | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper   | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | 90.017         | 32.5180    | 26.283                       | 153.751 | 7.663           | 1  | .006 |
| income              | -.008          | .0030      | -.014                        | -.002   | 7.541           | 1  | .006 |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>a</sup> |            |                              |         |                 |    |      |

Dependent Variable: train  
Model: (Intercept), income

a. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 13.12: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting taking the train from income.

has a standard normal distribution<sup>3</sup>. One could therefore calculate a  $Z$ -statistic  $Z = B/SE$  and see whether that value is smaller than 1.96 or larger than 1.96, if you want to test with a Type I error rate of 0.05. SPSS has chosen to not compute such a  $Z$ -statistic, but to compute a chi-square statistic  $X^2 = B^2/SE^2$ . This chi-square or  $X^2$ -statistic has a  $\chi^2$  distribution with 1 degree of freedom. Both approaches, computing  $Z$  or  $X^2$ , are equivalent.

The interpretation of the  $B$ -parameters is very similar to other linear models. Note that we have the following equation for the logistic model:

$$\begin{aligned} \text{logit}(p_{\text{train}}) &= b_0 + b_1 \text{income} \\ \text{train} &\sim \text{Bern}(p_{\text{train}}) \end{aligned} \quad (13.22)$$

If we fill in the values from the SPSS output, we get

$$\begin{aligned} \text{logit}(p_{\text{train}}) &= 90.017 - 0.008 \times \text{income} \\ \text{train} &\sim \text{Bern}(p_{\text{train}}) \end{aligned} \quad (13.23)$$

We can interpret these results by making some predictions. Imagine a traveller with a yearly income of 11,000 Euros. Then the predicted logodds equals  $90.017 - 0.008 \times 11000 = 2.017$ . When we transform this back to a probability, we get  $\frac{\exp(2.017)}{1 + \exp(2.017)} = 0.542$ . So this model predicts that for people with a yearly

<sup>3</sup>This is the reason why you see (scale) equal to constant 1 in the SPSS output, right under the parameter for **income**. In the logistic model, the variance (scale) is fixed (assumed known).

income of 11,000, about 52% of them take the train (if they travel at all, that is!).

Now imagine a traveller with a yearly income of 100,000. Then the predicted logodds equals  $6.752 - 0.001 \times 100000 = -709.983$ . When we transform this back to a probability, we get  $\frac{\exp(-709.983)}{1 + \exp(-709.983)} = 0$ . So this model predicts that for people with a yearly income of 100,000, close to none of them take the train. Going from 11,000 to 100,000 is a big difference. But the change in probabilities is also huge: it goes down from 0.52 to 0.

We found a difference in this sample of 1000 travellers, but is there also a difference in the entire population of travellers between Amsterdam and Paris? The SPSS table shows us that the effect of income,  $-0.008$ , is statistically significant,  $X^2(1) = 7.541, p < 0.01$ . We can therefore reject the null-hypothesis that income is not related to whether people take the train or not.

Note that similar to other linear models, the intercept can be interpreted as the predicted logodds for people that have values 0 for all other variables in the model. Therefore, 90.017 means in this case that the predicted logodds for people with zero income equals 90.017. This is equivalent to a probability of very close to 1.

### 13.3.1 Exercises

Using the train data, we try to predict whether people take the train or not by their purpose of their trip: business or not.

1. What does the SPSS syntax look like? Note the data in Table 13.1.
2. Suppose the results look like those in Figure 13.13. What is the predicted probability of taking the train for people that travel for business? Provide the calculations.
3. Suppose the results look like those in Figure 13.13. What is the predicted probability of taking the train for people that travel NOT for business? Provide the calculations.
4. Suppose the results look like those in Figure 13.14. What is the predicted probability of taking the train for people that travel for business? Provide the calculations.
5. Suppose the results look like those in Figure 13.14. What is the predicted probability of taking the train for people that travel NOT for business? Provide the calculations.
6. On the basis of this SPSS output, do business travellers tend to take the train more or less often than non-business travellers? Motivate your answer.
7. Suppose in SPSS output for logistic regression, you find an intercept value of 0.5 with a standard error of 0.1. There is a corresponding Wald chi-square value of 25. Explain where this Wald chi-square value comes from.

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |       |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|-------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |       | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | -1.155         | .1196      | -1.389                       | -.921 | 93.321          | 1  | .000 |
| business            | -.050          | .1531      | -.351                        | .250  | .108            | 1  | .742 |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>a</sup> |            |                              |       |                 |    |      |

Dependent Variable: train  
Model: (Intercept), business

a. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 13.13: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting taking the train from purpose of the trip.

8. Suppose we have the data on coin flips in following table:

| ID | Heads | weight    | type    |
|----|-------|-----------|---------|
| 1  | 0     | 2.7831226 | 5cents  |
| 2  | 1     | 0.8058492 | 10cents |
| 3  | 1     | 3.1401581 | 1Euro   |
| 4  | 1     | 1.0156831 | 10cents |
| 5  | 1     | 4.4503490 | 1Euro   |

If we want to predict the outcome of the coin flip, on the basis of the type of coin, should we use a linear model, a linear mixed model, or a generalized linear model? Motivate your answer.

If we want to predict the weight of the coin, on the basis of the type of the coin, should we use a linear model, a linear mixed model, or a generalized linear model? Motivate your answer.

Answers:

1. It could look like this (using WITH, treating the independent variable as quantitative):

```
GENLIN train (REFERENCE=FIRST) WITH business
  /MODEL business
  DISTRIBUTION=BINOMIAL LINK=LOGIT
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

or like this (using BY, treating the independent variable as qualitative)

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|--------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |        | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper  | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | -1.205         | .0957      | -1.393                       | -1.018 | 158.757         | 1  | .000 |
| [business=.00]      | .050           | .1531      | -.250                        | .351   | .108            | 1  | .742 |
| [business=1.00]     | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>b</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |

Dependent Variable: train

Model: (Intercept), business

a. Set to zero because this parameter is redundant.

b. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 13.14: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting taking the train from purpose of the trip.

```

GENLIN train (REFERENCE=FIRST) BY business
  /MODEL business
  DISTRIBUTION=BINOMIAL LINK=LOGIT
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.

```

2. People that travel for business score 1 on the business variable. So the predicted logodds for those people is  $-1.155 - 0.050 \times 1 = -1.205$ . The odds is the  $\exp(-1.205) = 0.299692$ . So the odds of going by train are 0.30 to 1. This is equivalent to 3 to 10. So suppose we have 13 trips, 3 are by train and 10 are not by train. So the probability of a trip being by train equals  $3/13 = 0.23$ .
3. People that travel NOT for business score 0 on the business variable. So the predicted logodds for those people is  $-1.155 - 0.050 \times 0 = -1.155$ . The odds is the  $\exp(-1.155) = 0.3150575$ . So the odds of going by train are 0.32 to 1. This is equivalent to 32 to 100. So suppose we have 132 trips, 32 are by train and 100 are not by train. So the probability of a trip being by train equals  $32/132 = 0.24$ .
- 4.
- 5.
6. If we want to predict the outcome of the coin flip, on the basis of the type of coin, we should use a generalized linear model, because the dependent variable is dichotomous (has only 2 values), so the residuals can never have a normal distribution.

If we want to predict the weight of the coin, on the basis of the type

of the coin, we should use a linear model, because the dependent variable is continuous.

## Chapter 14

# Generalized linear models for count data: Poisson regression

### 14.1 Poisson regression

Count data are inherently discrete, and often when using linear models, we see non-normal distributions of residuals. Let's go back to the beginning of this chapter, where we discussed a data set on the scores that a group of students got for an assignment. There were four criteria, and the score consisted of the number of criteria that were met for each student's assignment. Figure 13.3 showed that after an ordinary linear model analysis, the residuals did not look normal at all.

Table 14.1 shows part of the data that were analysed. Similar to logistic regression, perhaps we can find a distribution other than the normal distribution that is more suitable for this kind of data? For dichotomous data (1/0) we found the Bernoulli distribution very useful. For count data, the traditional distribution is the Poisson distribution.

Table 14.1: Scores on an assignment.

| ID | score | previous |
|----|-------|----------|
| 1  | 0     | 0.41     |
| 2  | 2     | -0.47    |
| 3  | 4     | 0.07     |
| 4  | 0     | -0.50    |
| 5  | 2     | -0.83    |
| 6  | 3     | 0.17     |

The normal distribution has two parameters, the mean and the variance. The



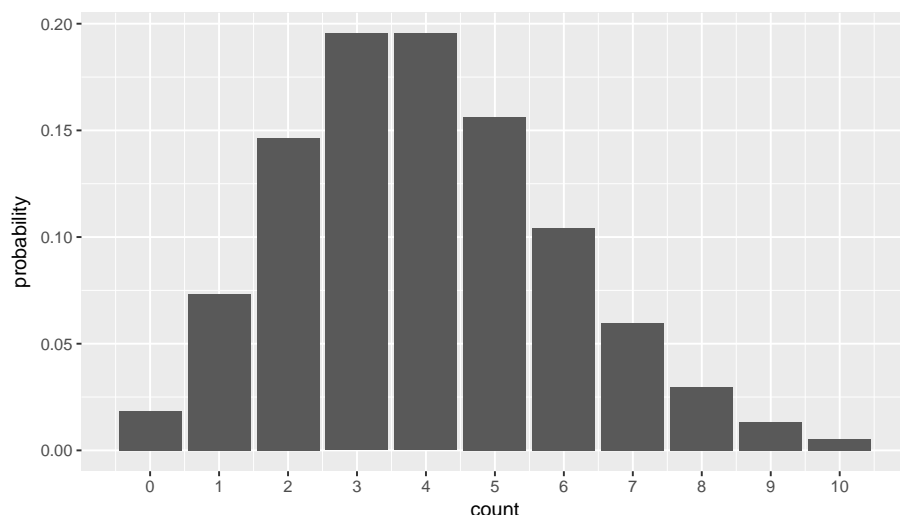


Figure 14.1: Count data example where the normal distribution is not a good approximation of the distribution of the residuals.

Bernoulli distribution has only 1 parameter (the probability), and the Poisson distribution has also only 1 parameter, lambda or  $\lambda$ .  $\lambda$  is a parameter that indicates tendency. Figure 14.1 shows a Poisson distribution with a tendency of 4.

What we see is that many values center around the tendency parameter value of 4 (therefore we call it a tendency parameter)! We see only discrete values, and no values below 0. We see a few values higher than 10. If we take the mean of the distribution, we will find a value of 4. If we would compute the variance of the distribution we would find also find 4! In general, if we have a Poisson distribution with a tendency parameter  $\lambda = 4$ , we know that both the mean and the variance will be equal to  $\lambda$ .

A Poisson model could be suitable for our data: a linear equation could predict the parameter  $\lambda$  and then the actual data show a Poisson distribution.

$$\lambda = b_0 + b_1 X \quad (14.1)$$

$$y \sim \text{Poisson}(\lambda) \quad (14.2)$$

However, because of the additivity assumption, the equation  $b_0 + b_1 X$  leads to negative values. A negative value for  $\lambda$  is not logical, because we then have a tendency to observe data like -2 and -4 in our data, which is contrary to the having count data, which consists of non-negative integers. A Poisson distribution always shows integers of at least 0, so one or way or another we have to make sure that we always have a *lambda* of at least 0.

Remember that we saw the reverse problem with logistic regression: there

we wanted to have negative values for our dependent variable logoddsratio, so therefore we used the logarithm. Here we want to have positive values for our dependent variable, so we can use the inverse of the logarithm function: the exponential. Then we have the following model:

$$\lambda = \exp(b_0 + b_1X) = e^{b_0+b_1X} \quad (14.3)$$

$$y \sim \text{Poisson}(\lambda) \quad (14.4)$$

This is a generalized linear model, now with a Poisson distribution and an exponential link function. The exponential function makes any value positive, for instance  $\exp(0) = 1$  and  $\exp(-100) = 0$ .

Let's analyze the assignment data with this generalized linear model. Our dependent variable is the number of criteria met for the assignment (a number between 0 and 4), and the independent variable is previous, which is a standardized mean of a number of previous assignments. We expect that the mean score on previous assignments is associated with a higher score on the present assignment. When we run the analysis, the result is as follows:

$$\lambda = \exp(0.1576782 - 0.0548685 \times \text{previous}) \quad (14.5)$$

$$\text{score} \sim \text{Poisson}(\lambda) \quad (14.6)$$

What does it mean? Well, similar to logistic regression, we can understand such equations by making some predictions for interesting values of the independent variable. For instance, a value of 0 for **previous** means an average grade on previous advanced that is around the mean value. So if we choose **previous**=0, then we have the prediction for an average student. If we fill in that value, we get the equation  $\lambda = \exp(0.1576782 - 0.0548685 \times 0) = \exp(0.1576782) = 1.17$ . Thus, for an average student, we expect to see a score of 1.17. A Poisson distribution with  $\lambda = 1.17$  is depicted in Figure 14.2.

Another interesting value of **previous** might be -2. That represents a student with generally very low grades. Because the average grades were standardized, only about 2.5% of the students has lower average grade than -2. If we fill in that value, we get:  $\lambda = \exp(\exp(0.1576782 - 0.0548685 \times -2)) = 0.85$ . A Poisson distribution with  $\lambda = 1.31$  is depicted in Figure 14.3.

The last value of **previous** for which we calculate  $\lambda$  is +2, representing a high-performing student. We then get  $\lambda = \exp(0.1576782 - 0.0548685 \times 2) = 1.6$ . A Poisson distribution with  $\lambda = 1.6$  is depicted in Figure 14.4.

If we superimpose these figures, we obtain Figure ??, where we see that the higher the average score on previous assignments, the higher is the expected score on the present assignment.

We found that in this data set, previous high marks for assignments predicted a higher mark for the present assignment. In the next section we see how to perform the analysis in SPSS, and check whether there is also a relationship in the population of students.

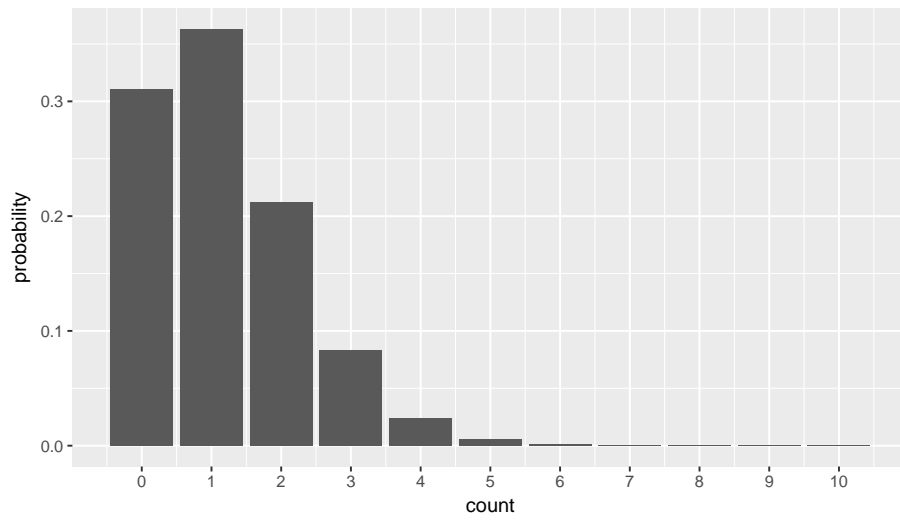


Figure 14.2: Poisson distribution with  $\lambda=1.17$ .

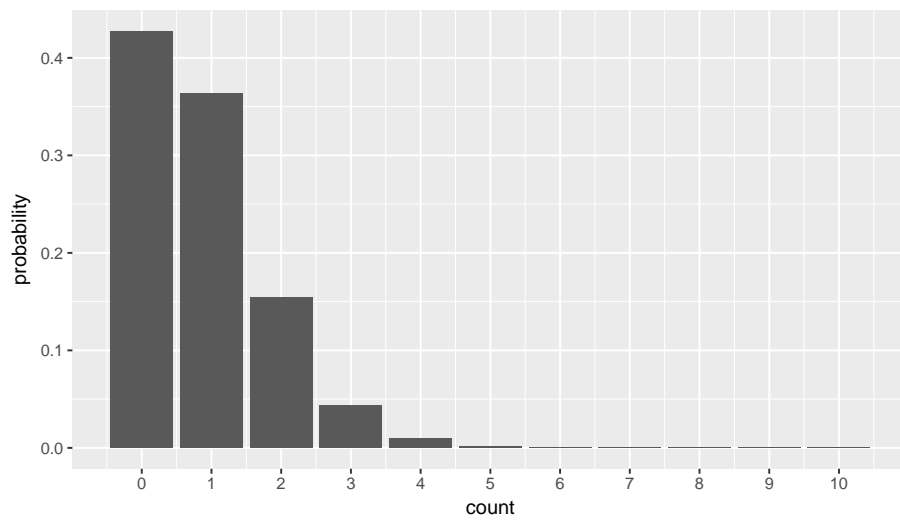


Figure 14.3: Poisson distribution with  $\lambda=0.85$ .

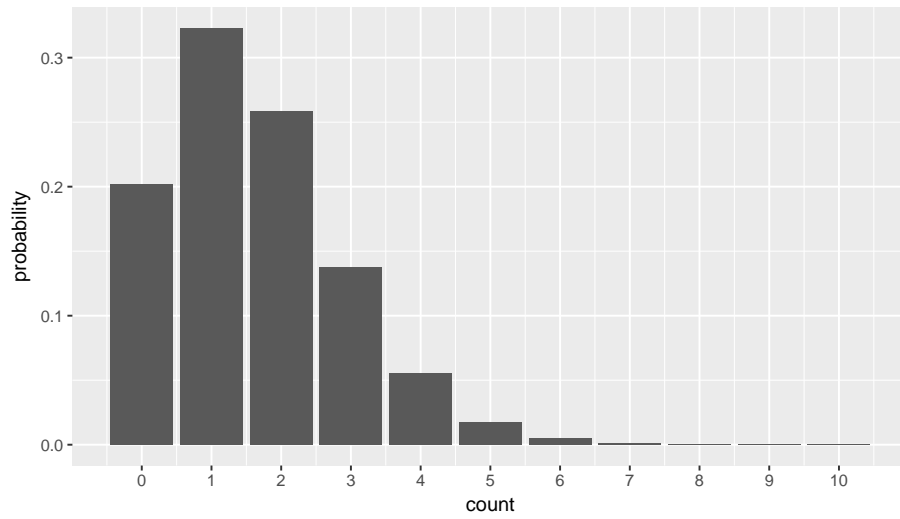


Figure 14.4: Poisson distribution with  $\lambda=1.60$ .

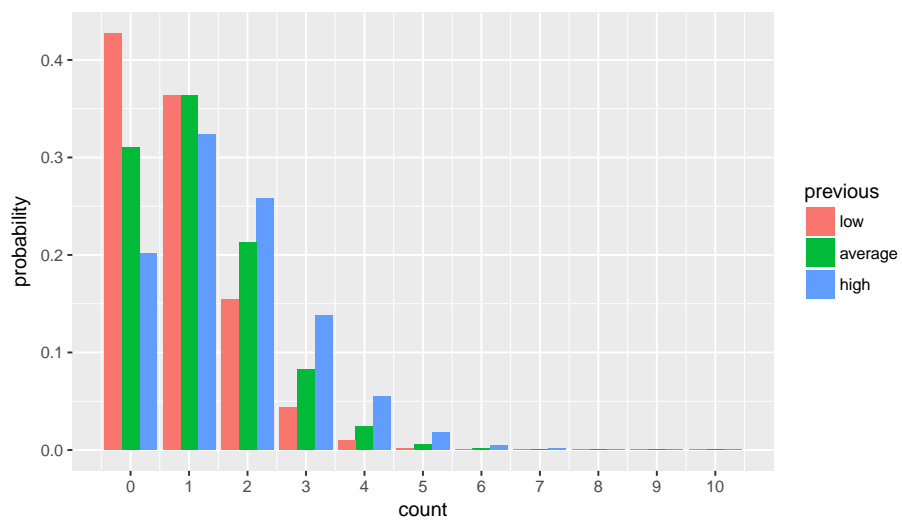


Figure 14.5: Three different Poisson distributions with lambdas 0.85, 1.17, and 1.60, for three different kinds of students.

## 14.2 Poisson regression in SPSS

Poisson regression is form of a generalized model analysis, similar to logistic regression. However, instead of using a Bernoulli distribution we use Poisson distribution. For a quantitative predictor like the variable **previous**, the syntax is as follows.

```
GENLIN scores WITH previous
  /MODEL previous
DISTRIBUTION=POISSON LINK=LOG
/PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

The output with parameter values is shown in Figure 14.6.

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |       |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|-------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |       | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | .158           | .0925      | -.024                        | .339  | 2.908           | 1  | .088 |
| previous            | -.055          | .0899      | -.231                        | .121  | .372            | 1  | .542 |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>a</sup> |            |                              |       |                 |    |      |

Dependent Variable: score  
Model: (Intercept), previous

a. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.6: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting assignments scores from the average of previous assignments.

We see the same values for the intercept and the effect of **previous** as in the previous section. We now also see 95% confidence intervals for these parameter values. For both, the value 0 is included in the confidence intervals, therefore we know that we cannot reject the null-hypotheses that these values are 0 in the population of students. This is also reflected by the Wald statistics. Remember that the Wald chi-square ( $X^2$ ) statistic is computed by  $B^2/SE^2$ . For large enough samples, these  $X^2$  statistics follow a  $\chi^2$  distribution with 1 degree of freedom. From that distribution we know that a value of 0.372 is not significant at the 5% level. It has an associated  $p$ -value of 0.542.

We can write:

Scores for the assignment (1-4) for 100 students were analysed using a generalized linear model with a Poisson distribution (Poisson regression). The scores were not significantly predicted by the average score of previous assignments,  $B = -0.06$ ,  $X^2(1) = 0.37$ ,  $p =$

0.54. Therefore we cannot reject the null-hypothesis that there is no relationship between the average of previous assignments and the score on the present assignment in the population of students.

Suppose we also have a qualitative predictor, for example degree that the students are working for. Some do the assignment for bachelor's degree (degree=1), some for a master's degree (degree=2), and some for a PhD (degree=3). The syntax would then look like:

```
GENLIN scores BY degree
  /MODEL degree
  DISTRIBUTION=POISSON LINK=LOG
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

Note that only the independent variable has changed and the WITH statement is changed into BY. The output is given in Figure 14.7.

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |       |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|-------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |       | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | .354           | .1459      | .068                         | .640  | 5.878           | 1  | .015 |
| [degree=1.00]       | -.584          | .2415      | -1.057                       | -.111 | 5.852           | 1  | .016 |
| [degree=2.00]       | -.089          | .2110      | -.503                        | .325  | .178            | 1  | .673 |
| [degree=3.00]       | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .     | .               | .  | .    |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>b</sup> | .          | .                            | .     | .               | .  | .    |

Dependent Variable: score  
Model: (Intercept), degree

- a. Set to zero because this parameter is redundant.  
b. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.7: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting assignments scores from the degree that is studied for.

We see that the parameter for the degree=3 category is fixed to 0, meaning that it is used as the reference category. If we make a prediction for this group of students that is studying for a PhD degree, we have  $\lambda = \exp(.354 + 0) = \exp(0.354) = 1.4$ . For the students studying for a Master's degree we have  $\lambda = \exp(.354 - 0.089) = 1.3$  and for students studying for their Bachelor's degree we have  $\lambda = \exp(.354 - 0.584) = 0.8$ . These  $\lambda$ -values correspond to the expected number in a Poisson distribution, so for Bachelor students we expect a score of 0.8, for Master students we expect a score of 1.3 and for Phd students a score of 1.4. Are these different scores also present in the population? We see that the effect for degree=1 is significant,  $X^2(1) = 5.85, p = 0.02$ , so there is a difference in score between students studying for a Bachelor's degree and students studying for a PhD. The effect for degree=2 is not significant,

$X^2(1) = 0.18, p = 0.67$ , so there is no difference in assignment scores between Master students and PhD students.

Remember that for the linear model, when we wanted to compare more than two groups at the same time, we used an  $F$ -test to test for an overall difference in group means. Also for the generalized linear model, we might be interested in whether there is an overall difference in scores between Bachelor, Master and PhD students. For that we need to tweak the syntax a little bit, by stating that we also want to see an overall test printed. The PRINT statements then also needs the word SUMMARY. In other words, the syntax becomes

```
GENLIN scores BY degree
  /MODEL degree
  DISTRIBUTION=POISSON LINK=LOG
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION SUMMARY.
```

We then get the relevant output in Figure 14.8. There we see a Wald Chi-Square statistic for the effect of **degree**. It has 2 degrees of freedom, since the effect for the 3 categories is coded by 2 dummy variables. So this test tells us that the null-hypothesis that the expected scores in each group of students are the same can be rejected,  $X^2(2) = 6.27, p = 0.04$ .

| Tests of Model Effects |                 |    |      |
|------------------------|-----------------|----|------|
| Source                 | Type III        |    |      |
|                        | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)            | 1.844           | 1  | .175 |
| degree                 | 6.271           | 2  | .043 |

Dependent Variable: score  
Model: (Intercept), degree

Figure 14.8: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting assignments scores from the degree that is studied for.

### 14.3 Interaction effects in Poisson models

In the previous subsection we looked at a count variable, the number of criteria fulfilled, and we wanted to predict it from the degree that students were studying

for. Let's look at an example where we want to predict a count variable from two qualitative predictors.

In 1912, the ship Titanic sank after the collision with an iceberg. There were 2201 people on board that ship. Some of these were male, others were female. Some were passengers, others were crew, and some survived, and some did not. For the passengers there were three groups: those travelling first class, second class and third class. There were also children on board. If we focus on only the adults, suppose we want to know whether there is a relationship between the sex and the counts of people that survived the disaster. The table in 14.2 gives the counts of survivors for males and females separately.

Table 14.2: Counts of adult survivors on the Titanic.

|        | count |
|--------|-------|
| Male   | 338   |
| Female | 316   |

Let's analyse this small data set with SPSS. In SPSS we assign the value sex=1 to Females and sex=2 to Males. Our dependent variable is count, and the independent variable is sex.

```
GENLIN count BY sex
  /MODEL sex
  DISTRIBUTION=POISSON LINK=LOG
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |       |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|-------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |       | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | 5.823          | .0544      | 5.716                        | 5.930 | 11460.858       | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=1.00]          | -.067          | .0783      | -.221                        | .086  | .740            | 1  | .390 |
| [sex=2.00]          | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .     | .               | .  | .    |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>b</sup> | .          | .                            | .     | .               | .  | .    |

Dependent Variable: count  
Model: (Intercept), sex

- a. Set to zero because this parameter is redundant.
- b. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.9: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting numbers of men and women onboard the Titanic.



From the output in Figure 14.9 we see that the expected count for females is  $\exp(5.823 - 0.067) = 318.3$  and the expected count for males is  $\exp(5.823) = 340.4$ . These expected counts are close to the observed counts of males and females. The only reason that they differ from the observed is because of rounding errors (SPSS shows only the first three decimals). From the Wald statistic, we see that the difference in counts between males and females is not significant,  $X^2(1) = 0.74, p = 0.39$ <sup>1</sup>.

The difference in these counts is very small. But does this tell us that women were as likely to survive as men? Note that we have only looked at those who survived. How about the people that perished: were there more men that died than women? Table 14.3 shows the counts of male survivors, female survivors, male non-survivors and female non-survivors. Then we see a different story: on the whole there were many more men than women, and a relatively small proportion of the men survived. Of the men, most of them perished: 1329 perished and only 338 survived, a survival rate of 20.3%. Of the women, most of them survived: 109 perished and 316 survived, yielding a survival rate of 74%. Does this tell us that women are much more likely than men to survive collisions with icebergs?

Table 14.3: Counts of adults on the Titanic.

| sex    | survived | count |
|--------|----------|-------|
| Male   | 0        | 1329  |
| Female | 0        | 109   |
| Male   | 1        | 338   |
| Female | 1        | 316   |

Let's first run a multivariate Poisson regression analysis including the effects of both sex and survival. The syntax is

```
GENLIN count BY sex WITH survived
  /MODEL sex survived
  DISTRIBUTION=POISSON LINK=LOG
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

where we treat sex qualitatively and survival quantitatively for convenience (**survived** is already coded as a dummy, **sex** is not).

The output is given in Figure 14.10. From the parameter values, we can calculate the predicted numbers of male (sex = 2) and female (sex = 1) that survived and perished. For female survivors we have  $\exp(7.04 - 1.37 - .79) = 131.63$ , for female non-survivors we have  $\exp(7.04 - 1.37) = 290.03$ , for male survivors we have  $\exp(7.04 - .79) = 518.01$  and for male non-survivors we have  $\exp(7.04) = 1141.39$ .

<sup>1</sup>Note that a hypothesis test is a bit odd here: there is no clear population that we want to generalize the results to: there was only one Titanic disaster. Also, here we have data on the entire population of those people on board the Titanic, there is no random sample here.

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|--------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |        | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper  | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | 7.044          | .0286      | 6.988                        | 7.100  | 60709.658       | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=1.00]          | -1.367         | .0543      | -1.473                       | -1.260 | 632.563         | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=2.00]          | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |
| survived            | -.788          | .0472      | -.880                        | -.695  | 279.073         | 1  | .000 |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>b</sup> |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |

Dependent Variable: count

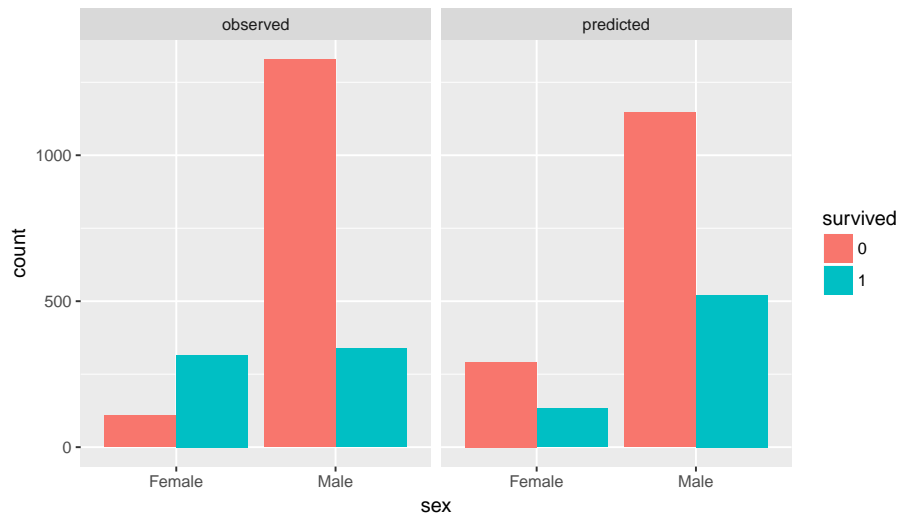
Model: (Intercept), sex, survived

a. Set to zero because this parameter is redundant.

b. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.10: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting numbers of men and women that perished and survived onboard the Titanic.

These predicted numbers are displayed in Figure ???. It also shows the observed counts. The pattern that is observed is clearly different from the one that is predicted from the generalized linear model. The linear model predicts that there are fewer survivors than non-survivors, irrespective of sex, but we observed that in females, there are more survivors than non-survivors. It seems that sex is a moderator of the effect of survival on counts.



In order to test this moderation effect, we run a new generalized linear model for counts including an interaction effect of sex by survived. This is done in SPSS syntax by changing the MODEL part by including a sex\*survived interaction:

```

GENLIN count BY sex WITH survived
/MODEL sex survived sex*survived
DISTRIBUTION=POISSON LINK=LOG
/PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.

```

The output is displayed in Figure 14.11.

| Parameter Estimates   |                |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |
|-----------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|--------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter             | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |        | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                       |                |            | Lower                        | Upper  | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)           | 7.192          | .0274      | 7.138                        | 7.246  | 68745.825       | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=1.00]            | -2.501         | .0996      | -2.696                       | -2.306 | 630.032         | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=2.00]            | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |
| survived              | -1.369         | .0609      | -1.489                       | -1.250 | 505.126         | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=1.00] * survived | 2.434          | .1267      | 2.185                        | 2.682  | 368.979         | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=2.00] * survived | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |
| (Scale)               | 1 <sup>b</sup> |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |

Dependent Variable: count

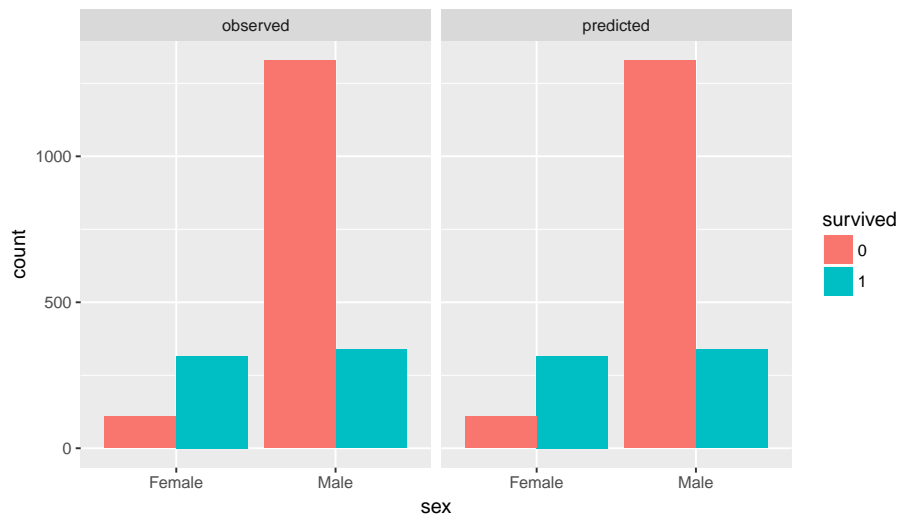
Model: (Intercept), sex, survived, sex \* survived

a. Set to zero because this parameter is redundant.

b. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.11: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting numbers of men and women that perished and survived onboard the Titanic.

When we plot the predicted counts from this new model with an interaction effect, we see that they are exactly equal to the counts that are actually observed in the data, see Figure ??.



From the output we see that the interaction effect is significant,  $X^2(1) = 91.82, p = 0$ . If we regard this data set as a random sample of all ships that sink after collision with an icebergs, we may conclude that in such situations, sex is a significant moderator of the difference in the numbers of survivors and non-survivors. One could also say: the proportion of people that survive a disaster like this is different in females than it is in males. Here we saw a higher survival rate in women than in men.

## 14.4 Crosstabulation and the Pearson chi-square statistic

The data on male and female survivors and non-nonsurvivors are often tabulated in a cross-table like in Table 14.4

Table 14.4: Counts of adult survivors and non-survivors on the Titanic.

|        | No   | Yes |
|--------|------|-----|
| Male   | 1329 | 338 |
| Female | 109  | 316 |

In the previous section these counts were analysed using a generalized linear model with a Poisson distribution and an exponential link function. We wanted to know whether there was a significant difference in the proportion of survivors for men and women. In this section we discuss an alternative method of analyzing count data. We discuss an alternative chi-square ( $X^2$ ) statistic for the moderation effect of one variable of the effect of another variable.

First let's have a look at the overall survival rate. In total there we 654 people that survived and 1438 people that did not survive. Table 14.5 shows these column totals.

Table 14.5: Counts of adult survivors and non-survivors on the Titanic.

|        | No   | Yes |
|--------|------|-----|
| Male   | 1329 | 338 |
| Female | 109  | 316 |
| Total  | 1438 | 654 |

Looking at these total numbers of survivors and non-survivors, we can calculate the proportion of survivors overall (the survival rate) as  $654/(654 + 1438) = 0.31$ .

Table ?? shows the totals for men and women, as well as the overall total number of adults.

Suppose we only know that of the 2092 people, 1667 were men, and of all people, 654 survived. Then suppose we pick a random person from these 2092 people. What is the probability that we get a male person that survived, *given that sex and survival have nothing to do with eachother?*

Table 14.6: Counts of adult survivors and non-survivors on the Titanic.

|        | No   | Yes | Total |
|--------|------|-----|-------|
| Male   | 1329 | 338 | 1667  |
| Female | 109  | 316 | 425   |
| Total  | 1438 | 654 | 2092  |

Well, from probability theory we know that if two events  $A$  and  $B$  are independent, the probability of observing  $A$  and  $B$  at the same time, is equal to the product of the probability of event  $A$  and the probability of event  $B$ .

$$Prob(A \text{ and } B) = Prob(A) \times Prob(B) \quad (14.7)$$

If sex and survival are independent from each other, then the probability of observing a male survivor is equal to the probability of seeing a male times the probability of seeing a survivor. The probability for survival is 0.31, as we saw earlier, and the probability of seeing a male is equal to the proportion of males in the data, which is  $1667/2092 = 0.8$ . Therefore, the probability of seeing a male survivor is  $0.8 \times 0.31 = 0.24$ . The expected number of male survivors is then that probability times the total number of people,  $0.24 \times 2092 = 502.08$ . Similarly we can calculate the expected number of non-surviving males, the number of surviving females, and the number of non-surviving females.

These numbers, after rounding, are displayed in Table 14.7.

Table 14.7: Expected numbers of adult survivors and non-survivors on the Titanic.

|        | No   | Yes |
|--------|------|-----|
| Male   | 1155 | 519 |
| Female | 289  | 130 |

The expected numbers in Table 14.7 are quite different from the observed numbers in Table 14.4. Are the differences large enough to think that the two events of being male and being a survivor are NOT independent? If the expected numbers on the assumption of independence are different enough from the observed numbers, then we can reject the null-hypothesis that being male and being a survivor have nothing to do with each other. To measure the difference between expected and observed counts, we need a test statistic. Here we use Pearson's chi-square statistic. It involves calculating the difference between the numbers in the respective cells, and standardize them by the expected number. Here's how it goes:

For each cell, we take the predicted count subtract it from the observed count. For instance, for the male survivors, we expected 519 but observed 338. The difference is therefore  $338 - 519 = -181$ . Then we take the square of this difference,  $181^2 = 32761$ . Then we divide this number by the expected number, and then we get  $32761/519 = 63.1233141$ . We do exactly the same thing for the

male non-survivors, the female survivors and the female non-survivors. Then we add these 4 numbers, and then we have the Pearson chi-square statistic. In formula form:

$$X^2 = \sum_i \frac{(O_i - E_i)^2}{E_i} \quad (14.8)$$

So for male survivors we get

$$\frac{(338 - 519)^2}{519} = 63.1233141 \quad (14.9)$$

For male non-survivors we get

$$\frac{(1329 - 1155)^2}{1155} = 26.212987 \quad (14.10)$$

For female survivors we get

$$\frac{(316 - 130)^2}{130} = 266.1230769 \quad (14.11)$$

and for female non-survivors we get

$$\frac{(109 - 289)^2}{289} = 112.1107266 \quad (14.12)$$

If we add these 4 numbers we have the chi-square statistic:  $X^2 = 467.57$ . Note that we only use the rounded expected numbers. Better would be to use the non-rounded numbers. Had we used the non-rounded expected numbers, we would have gotten  $X^2 = 460.87$ .

The Wald chi-square statistic for the sex\*survived interaction effect was 368.9788928, see Figure 14.11. It tests exactly the same null-hypothesis as the Pearson chi-square: that of independence, or in other words, that the numbers can be explained by only two main effects, sex and survival.

If the data set is large enough and the numbers are not too close to 0, the same conclusions will be drawn, whether from a Wald chi-square for an interaction effect in a generalized linear model, or from a crosstabulation and computing a Pearson chi-square. The advantage of the generalized linear model approach is that you can do much more with them, for instance more than two predictors, and that you make it more explicit that when computing the statistic, you take into account the main effects of the variables. You do that also for the Pearson chi-square but it is less obvious: we did that by first calculating the probability of survival and second calculating the proportion of males.

## 14.5 Poisson regression or logistic regression?

In the previous section we analyzed the relationship between the variable **sex** of the person onboard the Titanic, and the variable **survived**: whether or not a person survived the shipwreck. We found a relationship between these

two variables by studying the crosstabulation of the counts, and testing that relationship using a Pearson chi-square statistic. In the section before that, we saw that this relationship could also be tested by applying a Poisson regression model and looking at the sex by survived interaction effect. These methods are equivalent.

There is yet a third way to analyze the sex and survived variables. Remember that in the previous chapter we discussed logistic regression. In logistic regression, a dichotomous variable (a variable with only two values, say 0 and 1) is the dependent variable, with one or more quantitative or qualitative independent variables. Both sex and survived are dichotomous variables: male and female, and survived yes or survived no. In principle therefore, we could do a logistic regression: for example predicting whether a person is a male or female, on the basis of whether they survived or not, or the other way around, predicting whether people survive or not, on the basis of whether a person is a woman or a man.

What variable is used here as your dependent variable, depends on your research question. If your question is whether females are more likely to survive than men, perhaps because of their body fat composition, or perhaps because of male chivalry, then the most logical choice is to take survival as the dependent variable and sex as the independent variable.

The syntax for logistic regression then looks like

```
GENLIN survived (REFERENCE=FIRST) BY sex
  /MODEL business
  DISTRIBUTION=BINOMIAL LINK=LOGIT
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

Note however that the data is the wrong format. For the Poisson regression, the data were there in the form of what we see in Table 14.4. However, for a logistic regression, we need the data in the format like in Table 14.8. For every person onboard the ship, we have to know their sex and their survival status.

Table 14.8: Individual data of adult survivors and non-survivors on the Titanic.

| ID   | sex    | survived |
|------|--------|----------|
| 238  | Male   | 0        |
| 1302 | Male   | 0        |
| 1274 | Male   | 0        |
| 1303 | Male   | 0        |
| 1798 | Female | 1        |
| 1337 | Female | 0        |
| 20   | Male   | 0        |
| 485  | Male   | 0        |
| 1389 | Female | 0        |
| 1072 | Male   | 0        |

We use BY to treat the sex variable as qualitative. We use (REFERENCE =

FIRST) because we want to predict whether people survive (survive=1). Then our reference category is survive=0, which is the first value. In the output in Figure 14.12 we see that sex is a significant predictor of the survival status,  $B = 2.434$ ,  $X^2 = 368.98$ ,  $p < 0.001$ . The logoddsratio for a male surviving the shipwreck is  $-1.37$ , and the logoddsratio for a female surviving the shipwreck is  $-1.37 + 2.43 = 1.06$ . These logoddsratios correspond to probabilities of 0.20 and 0.74, respectively. Thus, some are much more likely to survive than men.

| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|--------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |        | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper  | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | -1.369         | .0609      | -1.489                       | -1.250 | 505.126         | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=1.00]          | 2.434          | .1267      | 2.185                        | 2.682  | 368.979         | 1  | .000 |
| [sex=2.00]          | 0 <sup>a</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>b</sup> | .          | .                            | .      | .               | .  | .    |

Dependent Variable: survived  
Model: (Intercept), sex

a. Set to zero because this parameter is redundant.  
b. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.12: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting numbers of men and women that perished and survived onboard the Titanic.

However, suppose you are the relative of a passenger onboard a ship that shipwrecks. After two days, there is news that a person was found. The only thing known about the person is that he or she is alive. Your relative is your niece, so you'd like to know on the basis that the person that was found lives, what is the probability that that person is a woman, cause then it could be your believed niece! You could therefore run a logistic regression on the Titanic data to see to what extent the survival of a person predicts the sex of the person. The syntax would then look like this:

```
GENLIN sex (REFERENCE=LAST) WITH survived
  /MODEL survived
  DISTRIBUTION=BINOMIAL LINK=LOGIT
  /PRINT CPS DESCRIPTIVES SOLUTION.
```

Note that we use WITH in order to treat the dummy variable survived as quantitative. We also use (REFERENCE=LAST) to indicate that we use the last (second) category of sex (2) as the reference category, because that category refers to men, because we want to predict whether a person is a female.

The output is give in Figure 14.13



| Parameter Estimates |                |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |
|---------------------|----------------|------------|------------------------------|--------|-----------------|----|------|
| Parameter           | B              | Std. Error | 95% Wald Confidence Interval |        | Hypothesis Test |    |      |
|                     |                |            | Lower                        | Upper  | Wald Chi-Square | df | Sig. |
| (Intercept)         | -4.934         | .2141      | -5.354                       | -4.515 | 531.265         | 1  | .000 |
| survived            | 2.434          | .1267      | 2.185                        | 2.682  | 368.979         | 1  | .000 |
| (Scale)             | 1 <sup>a</sup> |            |                              |        |                 |    |      |

Dependent Variable: sex  
Model: (Intercept), survived  
a. Fixed at the displayed value.

Figure 14.13: SPSS output of a generalized linear model for predicting numbers of men and women that perished and survived onboard the Titanic.

From this output we conclude that survival is a significant predictor of sex,  $B = -2.434$ ,  $X^2 = 368, 98, p < 0.001$ . The logoddsratio for a surviving person to be a woman is  $-4.93 + 2.43 = -2.50$ , and the logoddsratio for a non-surviving person to be a woman is  $-4.93$ . These logoddsratios correspond to probabilities of 0.08 and 0.01, respectively. Thus, if you know that there is a person that survived the Titanic, it is not very likely that it was a woman, only 8% chance. If you think this is counterintuitive, remember that even though a large proportion of the women survived the Titanic, there were many more men onboard than women.

In summary if you have count data, and one of the variables is dichotomous, you have the choice whether to use a Poisson regression model or a logistic regression. The choice depends on the research question: if your question involves *prediction* of a dichotomous variable, logistic regression is the logical choice. If you have a theory that one or more independent variable *explain* one other variable, logistic regression is the logical choice. If however your theory does not involve a natural direction or prediction of one variable, and you are simply interested in associations among variables, then Poisson regression is the obvious choice.